

The Project Gutenberg EBook of The Clergyman's Hand-book
of Law by Charles M. Scanlan

This eBook is for the use of anyone anywhere at no cost
and with almost no restrictions whatsoever. You may copy
it, give it away or re-use it under the terms of the Project
Gutenberg License included with this eBook or online at
<http://book.klll.cc/license>

Title: The Clergyman's Hand-book of Law

Author: Charles M. Scanlan

Release Date: March 12, 2011 [Ebook 35563]

Language: English

***START OF THE PROJECT GUTENBERG EBOOK
THE CLERGYMAN'S HAND-BOOK OF LAW***

The Clergyman's Hand-book of Law

The Law of Church and Grave

By

Charles M. Scanlan, LL.B.

Author of "Scanlan's Rules of Order," "Law of Fraternities,"

"Law of Hotels," etc.

New York, Cincinnati, Chicago

Benziger Brothers

1909

Contents

Imprimatur	2
Preface	3
Chapter I. Introduction	5
Chapter II. What Is A Church?	11
Chapter III. Constitutional Law	17
Chapter IV. Statutory Law	23
Chapter V. Unincorporated Church Societies	26
Chapter VI. Incorporated Religious Societies	29
Chapter VII. Superior Authority	35
Chapter VIII. Inferior Authority	38
Chapter IX. Membership	45
Chapter X. Heresy And Secession	48
Chapter XI. Excommunication	51
Chapter XII. Elections	54
Chapter XIII. Officers	58
Chapter XIV. Meetings	66
Chapter XV. Church Records	71
Chapter XVI. Church Tribunals	73
Chapter XVII. State Courts	77
Chapter XVIII. Evidence	81
Chapter XIX. Contracts	85
Chapter XX. Pews	88
Chapter XXI. Property	93
Chapter XXII. Religious Services	108
Chapter XXIII. Bequests, Devises, And Gifts	110
Chapter XXIV. Taxation	114
Chapter XXV. Eleemosynary Institutions	117
Chapter XXVI. Schools	119
Chapter XXVII. Parent And Child	126

Chapter XXVIII. Husband And Wife	130
Chapter XXIX. Indians	131
Chapter XXX. Juvenile Courts	133
Chapter XXXI. Libel And Slander	134
Chapter XXXII. Crimes	140
Chapter XXXIII. Cemeteries	148
Chapter XXXIV. Miscellaneous	163
Index	168
Footnotes	235

Imprimatur

Nihil Obstat.

REMY LAFORT,
Censor Librorum.

Imprimatur.

John M. Farley,
[cross] *Archbishop of New York.*

NEW YORK, January 15, 1909.

COPYRIGHT, 1909, BY BENZIGER BROTHERS.

Preface

The three learned professions, medicine, law, and theology, overlap; and a man who does not know something of the other two can not be prominent in his own. Laws relating to Church matters are scattered through such a vast array of law books that it would be a burden for a clergyman to purchase them, and without special training he would not know where to look for the law. Therefore a law compendium covering those subjects relating to Church matters must be of great value to a clergyman.

There is another view of this subject. When she was mistress of the world the laws of the Roman Empire were for the Roman citizens, particularly the patricians; the canon law was the law of the Christian people of conquered countries and the Christian plebeians of Rome. In the United States we have the same common law for the President and the hod-carrier, for the multimillionaire and the penniless orphan, for the clergy and the laity. Consequently, in this practical age a knowledge of the law of the country with which the clergy come constantly in contact is expedient, if not necessary. [vi]

The poet says:

“What constitutes a state?...

Men, who their duties know,

But know their rights, and knowing, dare maintain.”

To insure harmony and good order, every Church should obey the laws of the country; but if any law should impose upon the rights of the Church in any way, the ruling authorities, the cardinal and bishops, if the wrong is national, should unite in a petition to the United States Congress, clearly stating the grievance and asking for its redress.¹ If the grievance should be within a State, the bishop or bishops of the State should present the matter to the Legislature of the State. If the President or the Governor has authority to remedy the matter, go direct to him. Such was the practice of the wisest of the Popes.² The author never knew of an instance in which a clergyman having a real grievance failed in obtaining a full and fair hearing from the powers that be, from the President downward. This method seems to be more in harmony with the relations of Church and State in a free government, and more intelligent than to have a convention of working men, who have little time to make a study of Church matters, pass resolutions, the passing of which generally ends the action of a convention.

In the chapters that follow, the author has refrained from giving a great multitude of authorities, but has endeavored to give such as are sufficient to sustain the text. For example, under the first section, and many others, a list of citations covering several pages might be given. That would add to the expense of the volume and would not be within its compass. The book will better fulfil its purpose by clear, brief statements of the rules of law, and if a reader desires to investigate further, the citations given will guide his way.

CHARLES M. SCANLAN.

MILWAUKEE, JANUARY 23, 1909.

[vii]

[013]

¹ U. S. Constitution, Amendments, art. i, art. xiv, sec. 1.

² Lives of the Popes, Montor, vol. i, p. 94; Life of Leo XIII, "Philippine Question."

Chapter I. Introduction

1. *Law, Religion.*—From the dawn of the science of law it has been influenced by religion or antagonism to religion. This is very evident in the ancient laws of Babylonia, Egypt, Phenicia, Israel, India, and Ireland. It would be impossible to make a study of the law of any of said countries without gaining a knowledge of its religious system, whether pagan or otherwise.³

2. *Religions.*—Ancient nations might be classified into pagan and those that worshiped the universal God. However, some of the nations at one time were pagan and at other times had a fair conception of the supernatural. Also, in Egypt, the class of higher culture and education believed in the one omnipotent and omniscient Being, but the populace, who could be controlled more readily by flattering them in their notions and giving their childish conceptions full sway, worshiped idols.⁴ [014]

3. *Authority, Right.*—In those nations where the ruling authority had the proper conception of the Almighty, there was a strong, persistent growth of law upon the basis of natural right; while in the pagan nations laws were arbitrary and despotic.⁵

4. *Philosophical Foundations.*—The laws of Greece, down to the time of Plato, were thoroughly pagan. But, following the philosophical foundations laid by Plato and Aristotle, unintentionally and unwittingly the laws of Greece became imbued with the spirit of natural law.⁶

³ The Science of Jurisprudence, Taylor, p. 506; Historical Jurisprudence, Lee, p. 328.

⁴ Ancient Egypt, Rawlinson, vol. i, p. 323.

⁵ Historical Jurisprudence, Lee, pp. 98, 164, 274; History of England, Lingard, vol. i, c. vii; The Science of Jurisprudence, Taylor, p. 506.

⁶ Historical Jurisprudence, Lee, p. 257.

5. *Rome, Natural Justice.*—Prior to the introduction of Grecian law into Rome, the laws of that nation were pagan. Grecian law from its introduction to the time of Octavius was the civilizing element of the empire. Then it took a turn for the worse, the element of natural justice being reduced and the element of arbitrary rule becoming dominant.⁷

[015]

6. *Canon Law.*—We will now turn to the first period of canon law, which covers the early history of the Church up to the reign of Constantine the Great.⁸

Canon law is composed of the following elements:

1. Holy Scriptures;
2. Ecclesiastical tradition;
3. Decrees of Councils;
4. Bulls and rescripts of Popes;
5. The writings of the Fathers;
6. Civil law.⁹

7. *Early Christians.*—Owing to the persecutions, the early Christians were, in a sense, isolated from the State; they held their property in common, and were governed in matters among themselves by the canon law. However, for want of freedom of discussion and publication, they were unable, even within a single nation of the empire, to promulgate a system of canon law. The foundation of canon law being laid, its development upon the manumission of the Church was rapid.¹⁰

8. *Persecutions, Defenses.*—During the religious persecutions the Christians almost had law forced into them by surgical operations. The necessity for their making defenses in the Roman tribunals induced many of them to give Roman law a careful study. Also, the great number of Christians held for trial

[016]

⁷ Historical Jurisprudence, Lee, p. 271.

⁸ The Beginnings of Christianity, Shahan, 90.

⁹ Elements of Ecclesiastical Law, Smith.

¹⁰ Historical Jurisprudence, Lee, p. 387; Justinian, Sandar, p. 21.

on all sorts of accusations made that branch of the law of the realm very lucrative for lawyers, and called into the field many Christians. Incidentally, men studying for the priesthood made a study of Roman law with a view to avoiding its machinations and continuing their functions as clergymen without being caught in the net of persecution.¹¹

9. *Constantine, Blending the Law.*—When Emperor Constantine became a Christian (325 A.D.), there was a great change, and the members of the bar and judges were mostly Christians. It then became necessary for students of law to study the principles of divine right as taught in the Church, and while the books of the civil law were read by students for the priesthood, the Scriptures and the works of the Fathers were read by the students in law, thus blending the law of the two realms to some extent.¹²

10. *“Benefit of the Clergy,” Ecclesiastical Court.*—As the old Roman Empire decayed and its power waned, the new one, “The Holy Roman Empire,” gradually implanted itself in southwestern Europe. The humiliation that the divine law and the clergy suffered in being brought into the common courts gave rise to a system of courts within the Church for the purpose of enforcing her morals, doctrines, and discipline. Those courts were established in all Christian countries and had jurisdiction of all felonies excepting arson, treason, and a few other crimes that from time to time were put under the special jurisdiction of the state courts. Whenever a clergyman was arrested for a crime, he pleaded the “benefit of the clergy,” and his case was transferred from the state court to the ecclesiastical court. Also, when a clergyman was convicted in the state court of any crime for which the punishment was death, he could plead the “benefit of the clergy,” which was a protection against his execution.¹³ [017]

¹¹ The Beginnings of Christianity, Shahan.

¹² Universal Church History, Alzog.

¹³ Law Dictionary, Bouvier, “Benefit of Clergy,” “Canon Law”; Blackstone,

[018]

11. *Estates, Guardianship.*—Besides the jurisdiction already referred to, the ecclesiastical court had jurisdiction over the settlement of estates and the guardianship of children, which varied in different countries and was very indefinite in some of them.¹⁴

12. *Middle Ages, Common Law.*—During the Middle Ages there was a constant effort on behalf of the ecclesiastical courts to extend their jurisdiction, and a counter-effort on behalf of the state courts to assume jurisdiction of cases under the ecclesiastical law. In England, from the conquest of William the Conqueror to the Reformation, the extension of the jurisdiction of the ecclesiastical courts brought the new element of English common law into the canon law; and much of the canon law, following the jurisdiction assumed by the state courts, became the common law of the kingdom of England.¹⁵

[019]

13. *Gratian, Reformation.*—The canon law reached its full development in the twelfth century, when Gratian, the Blackstone of his age, compiled the system, but it subsequently lost its influence when the Reformation prevailed.¹⁶

14. *Bologna.*—The great school of jurisprudence, both of canon and civil law, was located at Bologna, Italy, which reached its zenith in the thirteenth century. To it students flocked from Western Europe, and from it were obtained the professors of law in the universities of England and other countries.¹⁷

15. *Church and State.*—In most of the Christian countries, the Church and State were united, and many of the judges in the

vol. i, p. 460, vol. iii, p. 61.

¹⁴ Blackstone, vol. i, p. 461.

¹⁵ Justinian, Sandar, p. 21; Cyc, vol. viii, p. 366, vol. xiv, p. 1228; Eq. Jurisprudence, Pomeroy, vol. i, p. 1; The Science of Jurisprudence, Taylor, p. 255 et seq; Blackstone, vol. i, pp. 18-20, 63; Kent, vol. i, p. 10; English Constitution, Creasy.

¹⁶ Blackstone, vol. i, p. 82, vol. iv, c. 33; The Science of Jurisprudence, Taylor, p. 337; Conflict of Laws, Wharton, sec. 172.

¹⁷ The American Cyclopaedia, "Bologna."

civil courts were clergymen.¹⁸

16. *England, Roman Law.*—On account of England's being subject to Rome in its earliest age, and afterward because of its being conquered by France, the Roman law was pretty thoroughly intermixed with the native English law in the minor matters of the people, and governed in the more important ones.¹⁹

17. *America, English Law, Civil Law.*—The portions of America that were settled by the English, which included the original thirteen colonies, were under the English law. In Virginia the Episcopal Church, which was then the church of England, was made the church of state. Canada and that portion of the United States formerly known as Louisiana were governed by the civil law of France. Wherever the French government had no authority or civil officers, the government was directly under the missionaries of the Church.²⁰ [020]

18. *Religious Tolerance, Established Church.*—The English law and English ideals prevailing in the original thirteen colonies,²¹ there was a strong effort made by many of the delegates to the constitutional convention to have the Episcopal Church made the established church of the new republic. Thomas Jefferson and James Madison were probably the strongest opponents of the scheme, and outside of the great Carroll of Carrollton, they were the most earnest advocates of religious tolerance. The necessity for the fathers of this republic to be united, and their being unable to unite upon any church, caused the idea of an established church to be eliminated. Thus was established in our republic the freedom of conscience and the guarantee that no one shall be persecuted on account of his

¹⁸ The Science of Jurisprudence, Taylor, p. 238.

¹⁹ Blackstone, vol. i, pp. 18-20, 79, vol. iv, c. 33.

²⁰ Commentaries, Kent, vol. i, c. xi, pp. 342, 473, 515, 525-544, vol. ii, p. 27; Origin and Nature of the Constitution and Government of U. S., U. S. Sup. Ct. Reps., 9 L. Ed., 873.

²¹ Commentaries, Kent, vol. i, p. 472; Blackstone, vol. i, p. 107.

[021]

religious convictions.²²

19. *Tribunals.*—The ecclesiastical courts as a part of the state system and the “benefit of the clergy,” have been abolished in England and America. However, as we shall see further on, tribunals in the nature of the ecclesiastical court exist in churches and fraternities of all kinds in the United States.²³

[022]

²² Commentaries, Kent, vol. ii, pp. 35-37; Conflict of Laws, Wharton (3rd ed.), vol. ii, pp. 1327-8.

²³ Law of Fraternities, Scanlan, ch. xxiv; Conflict of Laws, Wharton, sec. 109; Baxter v. McDonald, 155 N. Y., 83; 49 N. E., 667; Morris v. Dart, 67 S. C., 338; 45 S. E., 753; 100 Am. St. R., 734; Terrett v. Taylor, 13 U. S., 43; 3 L. Ed., 650.

Chapter II. What Is A Church?

20. *Church, Religious Society.*—Bouvier's definition of "Church" is: "A society of persons who profess the Christian religion." Chief Justice Shaw's definition is: "The church is neither a corporation nor a quasi-corporation, but a body of persons associated together for certain objects under the law. An aggregate body of individuals associated together in connection with a religious society. The term religious society may with propriety be applied in a certain sense to a church as that of religious association, religious union, or the like; yet in the sense church was and is used in our law, it is synonymous with parish or precinct and designates an incorporated society created and maintained for the support and maintenance of public worship. In this, its legal sense, a church is not a religious society. It is a separate body formed within such parish or religious society whose rights and usages are well known and to a great extent defined and established by law."²⁴

[023]

21. *Doctrine, Constitution.*—A church in law is a mere fraternal organization. It may or may not have a written constitution, but it must have some central doctrine as its foundation or constitution.²⁵ Many of the Protestant denominations claim that the entire Bible is their constitution. The Jews may be said to consider the Old Testament as their constitution. All revealed truths may be said to be the constitution of the Catholic Church,²⁶ and when a doctrine concerning faith or morals is authoritatively declared by the Church to be a truth,

²⁴ Weld v. May, 9 Cushing, Mass., 181.

²⁵ Martin v. State, 65 Tenn., 234.

²⁶ A Manual of Catholic Theology, Wilhelm and Scannell, p. xvii, et seq.

it becomes a dogma.²⁷ The Apostles' Creed is an example of several dogmatic truths. The code of the Church is the Ten Commandments. A few sects, by a majority vote, make and change their constitutions at will.

22. By-Laws.—By-laws of the different religious organizations differ widely, from the decrees of the great councils of the Catholic Church down to the vote of the congregation of an independent denomination.

[024]

23. Church, Religious Society.—A church in one sense is more limited than a religious society; the latter comprehending all the members of the same faith. Even in the Catholic Church we hear of the Church of France, the Coptic Church, etc., spoken of in this sense. And in a still more limited sense we use the word as a synonym for parish. However, when the word “the” is used before church written with a capital letter, Catholics understand it to apply to the Roman Catholic Church in its entirety, while some non-Catholics apply it to Christendom.

24. Church, Christians, Religion.—The missions established in California prior to its admission into the Union were, in law, practically independent organizations and had no legal connection with the Church. Every society organized for the purpose of propagating the practice of religion may be a church in law.²⁸ The courts have made a distinction between Unitarians, who are considered Christians, and Deists, Theists, Free Religionists, and other infidels.²⁹ A sect or denomination without a given system of faith is not recognized as a religion in law.³⁰

[025]

25. Doctrine, Standard.—To ascertain the tenets and doctrines of a church, resort must be had to history and to prior and

²⁷ A Catholic Dictionary, Addis and Arnold, “Dogma.”

²⁸ In re St. Louis Inst. of Christian Science, 27 Mo. App., 633.

²⁹ Hale v. Everett, 53 N. H., 9.

³⁰ State v. Trustees, 7 Ohio St., 58.

contemporary standard writings of its members on theology.³¹

26. *Ecclesiastical Corporations, Religious, Quasi-public Corporations.*—Ecclesiastical corporations, in the sense in which the word is used in England, Germany, and France, are unknown to the United States, their places being supplied by religious societies or corporations considered as private bodies, in contradistinction to public or quasi-public corporations, such as towns, villages, cities, counties, and state. Therefore, the law of private corporations applies to religious societies and churches.

27. *Sect, Sectarianism.*—The Supreme Court of Nevada defines “sect” as follows: “A religious sect is a body or number of persons united in tenets, but constituting a distinct organization or party, by holding sentiments or doctrines different from those of other sects or people. In the sense intended in the constitution, every sect of that character is ‘sectarian’ and all members thereof are sectarians.”³² In Pennsylvania the court adopted the definitions given in the Standard and in Webster's dictionaries.³³ The Supreme Court of Missouri, citing Webster's and the Century dictionaries, gave the following additional definition of sectarianism: “Sectarianism includes adherence to a distinct political party, as much as to a separate sect.”³⁴ The Presbyterians³⁵ and the “Shakers”³⁶ have been adjudged sects. [026]

28. *Sectarian.*—“Sectarian” has received more contradictory constructions than any other equally simple word in the English language. In Wisconsin the “King James” Bible was held to be a sectarian book;³⁷ but in Kentucky it was held that neither

³¹ Kniskern v. Lutheran Church, 1 Sandford, N. Y., Ch. 439.

³² State v. Hallock, 16 Nev., 373.

³³ Stephenson v. Hanyon, 7 Dist. Ct. Rep. Pa., 585.

³⁴ State v. Board, 134 Mo., 296; 35 S. W., 617.

³⁵ Synod v. State, 2 S. Dak., 366; 50 N. W., 632; 14 L. R. A., 418.

³⁶ Stebbins v. Jennings, 10 Pick., Mass., 172.

³⁷ State v. District Board, 76 Wis., 177; 44 N. W., 967; 20 Am. St. Rep., 41; 7 L. R. A., 330.

[027]

the Douay nor the "King James" Bible was a sectarian book.³⁸ The Missouri court extended sectarian so as to apply to the Republican party.³⁹ In Illinois an industrial school for girls in which the Catholic Sisters were employed as teachers, was held a sectarian institution;⁴⁰ while in Wisconsin, the "Wisconsin Industrial School for Girls," a private corporation organized and conducted by Protestant ladies, has received appropriations from the State and has had its reports published at state's expense, as a non-sectarian institution.⁴¹ In New York the religious garb of the Catholic Sisters was practically decided to be sectarian;⁴² but in Pennsylvania and Wisconsin it was decided that the dress of the Sisters was not sectarian.⁴³

[028]

29. *Worship, Services, Mass.*—Any act of adoration, reverence, praise, thanks, honor, or veneration given to God, is religious worship.⁴⁴ A Sunday-school where the Bible was read and a hymn sung and a state temperance camp-meeting where a prayer was said and hymns were sung, were held to be places of divine worship.⁴⁵ But a priest's house where he had a room fitted up for a chapel, was held to be not a place of worship.⁴⁶ It is very difficult to draw a line—no matter

³⁸ Hackett v. Brooksville, 27 Ky. L., 1021; 87 N. W., 792; 69 L. R. A., 592.

³⁹ State v. Board, 134 Mo., 296; 35 S. W., 617; 56 Am. St. Rep., 503.

⁴⁰ County v. Industrial School, 125 Ill., 540; 18 N. E., 183; 1 L. R. A., 437; 8 Am. St. Rep., 386.

⁴¹ "Wis. Industrial School for Girls," Wisconsin Blue Book. Session Laws of Wis., 1907, p. 1416 (index to Acts). Wis. Industrial School for Girls v. Clark Co., 103 Wis., 651; 79 N. W., 422.

⁴² O'Connor v. Hendrick, 184 N. Y., 421; 77 N. E., 612.

⁴³ Hysong v. Gallitzen, 164 Pa., 629; 30 At., 482; 44 Am. St. Rep., 623; 26 L. R. A., 203; Dorner v. School Dist., 118 N. W., 353 (Nov. 27, 1908). A good résumé of the subject is given in a footnote in 105 Am. St. R., 151.

⁴⁴ Stafford v. State, 45 So., 673. A Protestant Dictionary, Wright & Neil, and Webster's Dictionary, "Worship." A Catholic Dictionary, Addis and Arnold, "Latria."

⁴⁵ Gass's App., 73 Pa., 46; 13 Am. Rep., 726; State v. Norris, 59 N. H., 536.

⁴⁶ St. Joseph's Church v. Assessors, 12 R. I., 19; 34 Am. R., 597; Gerke v.

what curves you may give it—between the Protestant system of worship, which consists of the reading of the Bible, the singing of hymns, and the reciting of prayers, and such services in the public schools. Also, there would seem to be no *legal* difference between a prayer said or a hymn sung by a Catholic and a Protestant. As we have no established church in this country, we have no standard for prayers, hymns, or music.⁴⁷

More solemn and impressive than her prayers adapted for schools is the Mass of the Catholic Church, defined thus: “The Mass is the unbloody sacrifice of the body and blood of Christ.”⁴⁸ It is defined in 26 Cyc, 940, as follows: “A religious ceremonial or observance of the Catholic Church;⁴⁹ a Catholic ceremonial celebrated by the priest in open church, where all who choose may be present and participate therein;⁵⁰ the sacrifice in the sacrament of the Eucharist or the consecration and oblation of the Host.”⁵¹ [029]

30. *Parish.*—A parish has two meanings. In some States it is a minor division of public territory; but in States where there is no such division of territory, the State using instead “county” or “town,” a parish rather applies to the people belonging to a particular church, who worship at a particular place. It is in the latter sense in which a parish should be construed in church law.⁵²

Parishioner.—A parishioner must be defined in harmony with the meaning of the word “parish.”⁵³

31. *Clergyman.*—A clergyman is a man in holy orders or one who has been ordained in accordance with the rules of his church

Purcell, 25 Ohio, 229; Am. & Eng. Ency. of L., “Worship.”

⁴⁷ Ante, 28; Post, 346.

⁴⁸ Catholic Catechism.

⁴⁹ *Sherman v. Baker*, 20 R. I., 446; 40 At., 11; 40 L. R. A., 717.

⁵⁰ *Webster v. Surghow*, 69 N. H., 380; 45 At., 139; 48 L. R. A., 100.

⁵¹ *Coleman v. O'Leary*, 114 Ky., 388; 70 S. W., 1068.

⁵² *McEntee v. Bonacum*, 66 Neb., 651; 92 N. W., 633.

⁵³ American and English Encyclopedia of Law, “Parishoner.”

or denomination.⁵⁴

32. Minister.—A minister is one who acts as, or performs some of the functions of, a clergyman.⁵⁵

[030]

33. Rector or Pastor.—A rector or pastor is a clergyman who has charge of a parish.⁵⁶

34. Religion.—Religion is still further distinguished, but not very satisfactorily defined, for the reason that etymologists have not agreed upon the derivation of the word. When the matter was brought before our courts and it became necessary to give a definition, the highest court in our country gave the following: "The term 'religion' has reference to one's views of his relations to his Creator, and to the obligations they impose of reverence for His being and character, and of obedience to His will. It is often confounded with *cultus* or form of worship of a particular sect, but it is distinguishable from the latter."⁵⁷ One of our highest courts held that "religion," as used in the trust provision in a will for the purchase and distribution of religious books or reading as they shall be deemed best, means "Christian."⁵⁸ But the Supreme Court of another State held that "religion" is not equivalent to "Christian" religion, but means the religion of any class of men.⁵⁹ Judge Willis defines "religion" thus: "It is what a man honestly believes in and approves of and thinks it his duty to inculcate on others whether with regard to this world or the next; a belief in any system of retribution by an overruling power. It must, I think, include the principle of gratitude to an active power who can confer blessings."⁶⁰

[031]

[032]

⁵⁴ Ibid., "Minister"; 7 Cyc, 189, "Clergy."

⁵⁵ Ibid.

⁵⁶ Ibid.

⁵⁷ *Davies v. Beason*, 133 U. S., 333; 33 L. Ed., 637.

⁵⁸ *Simpson v. Welcome*, 72 Me., 496.

⁵⁹ *Board v. Minor*, 23 Ohio St., 250.

⁶⁰ *Baxter v. Langley*, 38 L. J., M. C., 1.

Chapter III. Constitutional Law

35. *Religious Tests.*—The constitution of the United States provides that “no religious test shall ever be required as a qualification to any office or public trust under the United States.”⁶¹

36. *Test Oath, Attainder.*—No test oath of any kind, whether religious or otherwise, can be required of a citizen of the United States. Therefore the test oath of Congress requiring an officer to swear that he never voluntarily bore arms against the United States, was held unconstitutional. Exclusion from any vocation on account of past conduct is punishment and contrary to the constitution on the subject of bills of attainder.⁶² But there is a limitation to this rule to prevent the open violation of the laws of the United States or any State under the cloak of religion.⁶³

37. *Establishment of Religion, Free Exercise.*—The first amendment to the United States constitution provides that [033] “Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof.”

38. *Sovereignty, States, Bigamy.*—The courts have held that this provision applies to Congress only, and can not be construed to interfere with the sovereignty of the several States; that the constitutional guarantee of religious freedom was not intended to prohibit legislation against polygamy; and that section 5352 of the United States Revised Statutes against bigamy, is constitutional.

⁶¹ Art. vi.

⁶² Ex parte Garland, 4 Wallace, 333; 18 L. Ed., 366.

⁶³ Church of Latter-Day Saints v. U. S., 136 U. S., 1; 34 L. Ed., 478; 140 U. S., 665; 35 L. Ed., 592.

Also, that on a trial for bigamy in Utah, a man who was living in polygamy was not competent to serve as a juror.⁶⁴

39. Church of the Latter-Day Saints.—In 1851 the assembly of the so-called State of Deseret, which subsequently became the territory of Utah, incorporated “the Church of the Latter-Day Saints.” In 1887 Congress repealed the act of incorporation and abrogated the charter, which the Supreme Court held was within its plenary powers. The pretense of religious belief can not deprive Congress of the power to prohibit polygamy and all other open offenses against the enlightened sentiments of mankind.⁶⁵

[034]

40. Crime, Religion.—The law prohibiting any person who is a polygamist or bigamist, or who teaches, advises, counsels, or encourages the same, from holding any office of honor, trust, or profit, is constitutional; and a crime is none the less so, nor less odious, because it is sanctioned by what any particular sect may designate as religion. A state has the right to legislate for the punishment of all acts inimical to the peace, good order, and morals of society.⁶⁶

41. Donation, Hostile, Religion.—On the other hand the United States Supreme Court declared the legal right of donees of a college to make as a condition of the donation that all ecclesiastics, missionaries, and ministers of any sort, should be excluded from holding any station of duty in the college or even visiting the same. The condition being only negatively derogatory and hostile to the Christian religion, did not make the devise for the foundation of the college void.⁶⁷

42. Christian Scientist.—A law requiring a person to be a physician to treat the sick, is constitutional; and the defense of a person who has no license to practise, that he is a Christian

⁶⁴ Reynolds v. United States, 8 Otto, 145; 25 L. Ed., 244.

⁶⁵ Church of Latter-Day Saints v. U. S., 136 U. S., 1; 34 L. Ed., 478; 140 U. S., 665; 35 L. Ed., 592.

⁶⁶ Davis v. Beason, 133 U. S., 333; 33 L. Ed., 637.

⁶⁷ Fenelon v. Girard, 2 Howard, 127; 11 L. Ed., 205.

Scientist, is not good. Also, a parent must furnish a doctor for his sick child, notwithstanding that he believes in prayer cure.⁶⁸ [035]

43. Protestant.—In the early days, under the constitution of the State, the courts of Massachusetts practically held that the Protestant religion was the religion of that State.⁶⁹ Also, the constitution of New Hampshire referred to different Christians, and the court in construing the terms “Roman Catholic” and “Protestant,” held that any one who did not assent to the truth of Christianity as a distinct system of religion, could not be classed as either. The court stated that Mohammedans, Jews, pagans, and infidels, are neither “Catholics” nor “Protestants.” The term “Protestant,” as used in the constitution of New Hampshire, includes all Christians who deny the authority of the Pope of Rome. When the children of Protestant parents renounce that religion, and voluntarily accept another, they cease to be Protestants.⁷⁰ At present under the constitution of New Hampshire, the legislature may authorize towns or parishes to provide for the support of Protestant ministers.⁷¹ [036]

44. Hospitals, Sisters, Appropriation.—In 1864, Providence Hospital, of Washington, was incorporated by an act of Congress, for general hospital purposes. In 1897, \$30,000 was appropriated for the District of Columbia to put up two isolation buildings in connection with two hospitals in that city, to be operated as a part of such hospitals. Providence Hospital was selected as one, and because it was in charge of Sisters of the Roman Catholic Church, the right of Congress to make the appropriation was disputed. Among other things, Judge Peackham says: “Whether the individuals who compose the corporation under its charter

⁶⁸ State v. Marble, 72 Ohio St., 21; 73 N. E., 1063; State v. Chenoweth, 163 Ind., 94; 71 N. E., 197; People v. Reetz, 127 Mich, 87; 86 N. W., 396; 59 Cen. L. J., 202; 68 L. R. A., 432.

⁶⁹ Thaxter v. Jones, 4 Mass., 570.

⁷⁰ Hale v. Everett, 53 N. H., 9.

⁷¹ Federal and State Constitutions, Stimson.

happen to be all Roman Catholics, or all Methodists, or all Presbyterians, or Unitarians, or members of any other religious organization, or of no organization at all, is of not the slightest consequence with reference to the law of its corporation, nor can the individual beliefs upon religious matters of the various incorporators be inquired into." The appropriation was "for two hospital buildings to be constructed in the discretion of the commissioners of the District of Columbia on the grounds of two hospitals and to be operated as a part of such hospitals."⁷²

[037]

45. *Constitution, Rights.*—The provisions in the constitution do not in any way interfere with property rights obtained by a church organization prior to its adoption.⁷³

46. *Aid, Contracts.*—Under the constitution of the United States, Congress cannot make appropriations for nor give aid to any denomination. Also, similar provisions are in many of the constitutions of the States. However, many cases arise out of contracts which border upon these various rules, and in some States the constitutional provision of the State is such that the State Legislature may legislate concerning religion and give certain aid and support thereto. Paying rent to a congregation for a school-room is not an appropriation or aid to a church contrary to the constitution.⁷⁴

47. *Protestant Teacher, Tax.*—Formerly every parish in Massachusetts was obliged to elect and support a Protestant teacher, and might erect churches and parsonages. To provide the expenses thereof, a tax might be assessed upon the polls of the inhabitants.⁷⁵ Until 1890 New Hampshire permitted a tax to be levied in towns for religious purposes. It is still legal under

[038]

⁷² *Bradford v. Roberts*, 175 U. S., 291; 44 L. Ed., 168; 20 Sup. Ct. R., 121; *Municipality of Ponce v. The Roman Catholic Apostolic Church*, 28 Sup. Ct. R., 737 (1908).

⁷³ *Terrett v. Taylor*, 9 Cranch, 43; 3 L. Ed., 650; *Municipality, etc., v. Church*, 28 Sup. Ct. R., 737.

⁷⁴ *Millard v. Board*, 19 Ill., 48; *Dorner v. Dist.*, 118 N. W., 353.

⁷⁵ *Ashby v. Wellington*, 25 Mass., 524.

the New Hampshire constitution to tax the inhabitants for the purpose of supporting Protestant teachers, but not to support a teacher of any other denomination.⁷⁶ A section of land in every township in Ohio was set apart for religious societies, in which they all shared equally.⁷⁷ Vermont had a similar provision.⁷⁸

48. *Office, God.*—The constitutions of Arkansas, Mississippi, North Carolina, South Carolina, and Texas, prohibit a man from holding office who denies the existence of a Supreme Being; and the constitutions of Delaware, Maryland, Kentucky, and Tennessee, make all clergymen ineligible to hold a civil office.⁷⁹

49. *Religious Liberty, Bible, Religious Garb, Wages.*—The authorities are not uniform as to what constitutes a violation of religious liberty. The question of whether the reading of the Bible in the public schools is a violation of the constitution, is an open one in some States and in others the courts have passed upon it, some holding that it is a violation of the constitution,⁸⁰ and some holding that it is not.⁸¹ The weight of authority seems to permit the reading of the “King James” Bible,⁸² and where portions only are read, as in “reading books” prepared for school work, or where the children are not obliged to be present during the exercises, the cases seem to be unanimous that it is not a violation of the constitution.⁸³ In Pennsylvania the court held that while Sisters in their religious garb might be teachers in the [039]

⁷⁶ Federal and State Constitutions, Stimson, p. 139; *Hale v. Everett*, 53 N. H., 9.

⁷⁷ *State v. Trustees*, 11 Ohio, 24.

⁷⁸ *First v. Leach*, 35 Vt., 108.

⁷⁹ Federal and State Constitutions, Stimson, p. 139.

⁸⁰ *State v. District*, 76 Wis., 177; 44 N. W., 967; 20 Am. St. R., 41; 7 L. R. A., 330.

⁸¹ *Church v. Bullock*, 100 S. W. (Tex.), 1025; *Millard v. Board*, 121 Ill., 297; 10 N. E., 669; *Hackett v. Brooksville*, 27 Ky. L., 1021; 87 S. W., 792; 69 L. R. A., 592; 61 C. L. J., 49.

⁸² *Church v. Bullock*, 100 S. W., 1025.

⁸³ *Moore v. Monroe*, 64 Ia., 367; 20 N. W., 475; 66 L. R. A., 166; 52 Am. R., 444; *Pfeiffer v. Board*, 118 Mich., 560; 77 N. W., 250; 42 L. R. A., 536.

public schools, they could not give instruction in the Catholic religion at the schoolhouse before or after school hours, or at any other time use the school building for religious purposes. Also, in Wisconsin the court decided that while a portion of a parochial school building might be leased for public school purposes and the Sisters be employed therein as teachers, religious exercises and instructions could not be given in such leased premises.⁸⁴ In New York it was held not only that Sisters could not wear their religious garb or pray in school, but that they could not collect wages for teaching.⁸⁵

[040]

[041]

⁸⁴ *Hysong v. Gallitzin Borough School*, 164 Pa. St., 629; 30 At., 482; 26 L. R. A., 203; *Dorner v. School District*, 118 N. W., Wis., 353 (Nov. 27, 1908).

⁸⁵ *O'Connor v. Hendricks*, 96 N. Y. S., 161.

Chapter IV. Statutory Law

50. *Wisconsin, Mississippi, New York.*—The statutory law of the different States of the Union is so varied and the laws of one State are of so little interest to the people of another that it would be almost useless and beyond the boundaries of this work to give the substance of the various statutes. In some States there is a limitation upon the real estate that a church or charitable organization may hold, and in other States there is no limitation whatever. Wisconsin, perhaps, occupies the extreme of greatest liberality, by not only allowing full freedom in everything relating to religion and charity, but it further excepts from the limitation all rights of alienation of real estate granted or devised to a charitable association or to literary or charitable corporations organized under the law of the State. The State of Mississippi probably stands at the other extreme both in the narrowness of its constitution and statutory law, and prohibits any devise or bequest of any personal property or real estate in favor of any religious or ecclesiastical corporation or any religious or ecclesiastical society. Neither does it exempt a clergyman, physician, or lawyer, from examination as a witness concerning information that he obtained in the performance of his functions or duties as such. Its judges, however, are more liberal than its legislators, and I know of no instance in which a clergyman, physician, or lawyer, as a witness, was sent to jail for contempt of court for not divulging information obtained in his professional capacity. Probably New York has the most complete code⁸⁶ relating to religious corporations.

⁸⁶ Ch. 723, L. 1895.

51. *Real Estate, Parish, Diocese, Taxation.*—It is very important that a congregation about to purchase real estate should examine and understand the statutory law of the State governing the powers and authority of the Church as a civil organization. In some States there is no special law for incorporating religious societies; while in most States there are special provisions therefor. For this reason, I emphasize the fact that no parish or clergyman is justified in organizing a congregation or purchasing land without first knowing the law of that particular State. But generally it is best that each congregation be incorporated and that its property be held in the name of the corporation, so that the debts of one corporation will not embarrass the diocese, and that bequests and gifts made to a church may be enforced in the courts. The proceedings to incorporate are fully stated in the statutes of each State. One of the things of the utmost importance is that any notice to be given must be given strictly as required by law.⁸⁷ Another is to incorporate in the way that avoids taxation.⁸⁸

[043]

52. *Riot, Damages.*—Under a statute providing that a person whose property is destroyed by riot may bring suit against the county for damages, a corporation for religious purposes, as well as an individual, has a right of action.⁸⁹

53. *Use, Change, Parsonage, Discipline, Doctrine, Curate.*—When a fee simple is acquired by a religious corporation, without restriction as to quantity, but limiting the purpose of its use, a subsequent Legislature, with the consent of the corporation, has power to change or abrogate altogether the restrictions as to the use of the land.⁹⁰ And the Legislature may empower the church corporation to convey a house devised

[044]

⁸⁷ *West v. Otteson*, 80 Wis., 62; 49 N. W., 24; *Ferraria v. Vasconcellos*, 23 Ill., 456; 31 Ill., 25.

⁸⁸ *Gitzhoffen v. Sisters*, 88 Pac., 691; 32 Utah, 46; *Trustees v. B. P. O. E.*, 122 Wis., 452; 100 N. W., 837.

⁸⁹ *Hermits v. County*, 7 Pa. L. J., 124.

⁹⁰ *Trustees v. Manning*, 72 Md., 116; 19 At., 599.

to it for a parsonage with a condition that it be kept in repair, and invest the proceeds in other property to be held for the same purpose.⁹¹ A State legislature can not interfere in church discipline and doctrine, as by legislating what shall constitute a curate in the Catholic Church.⁹²

[045]

⁹¹ *In re Van Horn*, 18 R. I., 389.

⁹² *Wardens v. Blanc*, 8 Rob, La., 51.

Chapter V. Unincorporated Church Societies

54. *Partners, Debt, Liability.*—Where several go into an undertaking without first being incorporated they are usually liable as partners, each one being responsible for the whole debt. In some States the same liability exists where an attempt has been made to incorporate, but there was a failure to comply fully with the law.⁹³ There is some authority freeing the individual members of a religious society from liability for the debts of such society,⁹⁴ and holding that an agent of such society could not bind the society in their associated capacity by a promissory note,⁹⁵ but the rule is that the members of an unincorporated society who actively incur lawful debts or ratify them after their creation are personally liable. There are exceptions to this rule by statute or decisions in a few States.⁹⁶ Also, the law of personal liability is settled in England.⁹⁷

[046]

55. *Pastor, Salary.*—In a late case in Wisconsin where a pastor had a contract with his congregation as to his salary, after the clergyman's death his heirs recovered the unpaid part of his salary in an action against a few of the individual members of the congregation.⁹⁸

⁹³ *Rutherford v. Hill*, 22 Or., 218; 29 Pac., 546; 17 L. R. A., 549; 56 Cen. L. J., 221; *Wechselberg v. Flour*, 64 F., 90.

⁹⁴ *Jewett v. Thames Bank*, 16 Conn., 511.

⁹⁵ *Jeffts v. York*, 10 Cushing, 392.

⁹⁶ *Allen v. M. E. Church*, 127 Ia., 96; 102 N. W., 808; 69 L. R. A., 255; *Sawyer v. Methodist*, 18 Vt., 405.

⁹⁷ *Wise v. Perpetual Trustees*, House of Lords, 57 C. L. J., 104.

⁹⁸ *Sheehy v. Blake*, 77 Wis., 394; 46 N. W., 537; 69 L. R. A., 255.

56. *Building, Materials.*—The members of the building committee of an unincorporated church are liable for materials purchased by them for the church, notwithstanding that the seller charged the materials in the name of the church, and that at the time that the purchase was made, he was told that the money for payment was to be raised by subscription among the congregation.⁹⁹

57. *Management, Disability.*—An unincorporated society is managed by those who are competent to transact their own business. Therefore, it would seem that members must be men over twenty-one years of age, and not under legal disability. The minor sons in a family who have continued their attendance at the religious services until of full age, are considered members.¹⁰⁰ [047]

58. *Shakers, Sect, Catholic Church, Trustees, Funds.*—Although the sect called Shakers is not incorporated, yet it has been allowed to take and hold property for church purposes.¹⁰¹ In Massachusetts, by statute, a sect may take and hold property for religious purposes without incorporation.¹⁰² The Roman Catholic Church is a recognized public corporation by most nations, including the United States.¹⁰³ No individual member of any such body has any title to the lands it holds, but the lands are the property of the society in its aggregate capacity.¹⁰⁴ After property has been acquired, the trustees have no right to distribute it among the members, as such power could not be conferred upon them by a majority vote even when approved by an order of the court. The contributors did not intend their funds

⁹⁹ Clark v. O'Rourke, 111 Mich., 108; 69 N. W., 147.

¹⁰⁰ Bradford v. Cary, 5 Me., 339; Lynch v. Pfeiffer, 110 N. Y., 33; 17 N. E., 402; In re St. Luke's, 17 Philadelphia, 261.

¹⁰¹ Addison v. Brock, 3 Me., 243.

¹⁰² Stebbins v. Jennings, 10 Pickering, 172.

¹⁰³ Municipality of Ponce v. Roman Catholic Church, 28 Sup. Ct. R., 737; 6 Cyc, 915.

¹⁰⁴ Ferrara v. Vasconcellos, 31 Ill., 25; Mason v. Muncaster, 9 Wheaton, 468; 6 L. Ed., 131.

[048]

to be so disposed of, and if they failed to attain the use intended, they must be returned to the donors, and if not called for, would escheat to the state.¹⁰⁵ Where an unincorporated society has purchased property and taken the title thereto in the name of one of its members, when it subsequently incorporates such member may be required to execute a conveyance to the corporation.¹⁰⁶

59. *Contract, Binding.*—Persons forming a religious society may make a contract for the support of its minister by a majority vote.¹⁰⁷ When such unincorporated society by a majority vote enters into a contract or compromises a suit, it is binding upon the minority.¹⁰⁸

60. *Court, Trust.*—Any member of an unincorporated society may go into a court of equity on behalf of himself and others to enforce the execution of a trust in favor of the society.¹⁰⁹

[049]

61. *Societies, Membership, Forfeiture.*—Voluntary religious societies when not restricted by their charters or articles of association, may make by-laws declaring what shall constitute membership and what shall operate as a forfeiture thereof, applicable to existing as well as to future members. Where money is voted to be raised by an assessment to be made at a subsequent period, a person who was a member of the religious society at the time that such vote was passed, but withdraws before the time of assessment, is not liable to taxation.¹¹⁰

[050]

¹⁰⁵ *Wheaton v. Gates*, 18 N. Y., 395.

¹⁰⁶ *South v. Yates*, 1 Hoff. N. Y., 142; *Miller v. Chittendon*, 42 Ia., 252; *Newmarket v. Smart*, 45 N. H., 87; *Evangelical Appeal*, 35 Pa. St., 316.

¹⁰⁷ *Congregational Society v. Swan*, 2 Vt., 222.

¹⁰⁸ *Horton v. Baptist Church*, 34 Vt., 309.

¹⁰⁹ *Associated Reform Church v. Theological Seminary*, 4 N. J. Eq., 77.

¹¹⁰ *Taylor v. Edison*, 4 Cushing, 522.

Chapter VI. Incorporated Religious Societies

62. *Special Law, General Laws.*—In most of the States there is a special law under which congregations may be incorporated. New York is a good example.¹¹¹ Where such law does not exist, the congregation may be incorporated under the general laws. For business reasons each congregation should be incorporated.¹¹²

63. *Officers, Discipline, Property.*—When a church society incorporates it becomes a private corporation, and the officers are bound to manage the property in the most upright and careful manner according to the discipline of the church.¹¹³ When a parish incorporates, the title to the parish property vests in the corporation, to which trustees may be compelled to convey it.¹¹⁴

64. *Incorporation, Evidence.*—The certificate of incorporation or charter of a religious society or a certified copy thereof from the public record, is the proper evidence thereof.¹¹⁵ Secondary evidence and evidence *aliunde* may be competent in some forums.¹¹⁶ In most States if incorporation is alleged in the complaint, it need not be proved unless denied by an affidavit or a verified answer. [051]

65. *Congregation, Members.*—The act of incorporation applies only to the particular congregation petitioning for it and does not extend to other churches, even though they are a

¹¹¹ Laws of 1895, ch. 723; Religious Corporations, Cummings and Gilbert.

¹¹² Heiss v. Vosburg, 59 Wis., 532; 18 N. W., 463.

¹¹³ Tartar v. Gibbs, 24 Md., 323.

¹¹⁴ Christian C. v. C., 219 Ill., 503; 76 N. E., 703.

¹¹⁵ Jackson v. Legate, 9 Wendell, N. Y., 377.

¹¹⁶ 10 Cyc, 235-244.

subsequent growth within the same territory.¹¹⁷ Incorporation once established is presumed to continue.¹¹⁸ When a new religious society is formed and incorporated, consisting of individuals from existing parishes, the members of the new society from the time of its incorporation cease to be members of the respective parishes to which they had belonged.¹¹⁹

66. *Temporal Affairs, Management.*—A majority of a religious corporation at a regularly called meeting may, by a vote taken, bind the minority in all temporal affairs.¹²⁰ The character of membership in the religious corporation may be very different from that of membership in the church.¹²¹ The fact that a member has been declared out of the church by an ecclesiastical tribunal, may not affect his rights in the management of the temporal concerns of the corporation.¹²²

67. *Corporators, Change.*—In isolated cases here and there it has been held that a majority of the corporators of a religious society has the right to change the form of church government, as from the Congregational Church to an organization in connection with the Presbyterian Church.¹²³ But it is a general rule that a majority of the congregation can act only consistently with the particular and general laws of the church organization, but not in violation of them.¹²⁴

68. *Constitution, Subsequent Laws.*—An ecclesiastical society formed before the adoption of the state constitution is not by that constitution and subsequent laws concerning religious societies

¹¹⁷ Atty-Gen. v. Dutch, 36 N. Y., 452.

¹¹⁸ Methodist v. Pickett, 23 Barber, 436.

¹¹⁹ Sutton v. Cole, 8 Mass., 96.

¹²⁰ Miller v. English, 21 N. J. L., 317.

¹²¹ Enos v. Church, 187 Mass., 40; 72 N. E., 253.

¹²² Baptist v. Wetherell, 3 Paige, N. Y., 296; In re Williams, 105 N. Y. S., 1105; Contra: First R. P. Ch. v. Bowden, 10 Abb., N. C., 1.

¹²³ Bellports v. Tooker, 29 Barber, N. Y., 256.

¹²⁴ Sutter v. First, 42 Pa. St., 503.

divested of its legal character.¹²⁵

69. *Name, Change.*—The name of an ecclesiastical corporation is arbitrary and a change or alteration in its name does not affect its identity.¹²⁶ A charter will not be granted to a church with a name so like another church in the same State, that one may be taken for the other.¹²⁷ [053]

70. *Church, Regular.*—In church organizations those who adhere to the regular order of the church, legal and general, though a minority, are the true congregation and constitute the corporation if incorporated.¹²⁸

71. *Notice, Legal.*—All the proceedings of a corporation, including notice, must be in accordance with the constitution and by-laws, and no business transacted contrary thereto is legal.¹²⁹

72. *Control, Secede, Vested Rights.*—The officers of a church corporation have control of the business management for all civil purposes, excepting as otherwise provided by the articles of organization, charter, or by-laws of the corporation. However, the by-laws must not contravene the laws of the State.¹³⁰ A charter was refused in Pennsylvania which provided that the congregation might, by a majority vote, dissolve or secede from the central body and divide the property.¹³¹ A charter of incorporation may be amended in harmony with the principles, discipline, and objects of the church, but not otherwise.¹³² The fact that incorporation of a church confers certain rights and privileges under the charter, such charter being accepted, does [054]

¹²⁵ Atwater v. Woodbridge, 6 Conn., 223.

¹²⁶ Wardens v. Hall, 22 Conn., 125.

¹²⁷ Beach, Private Corporations, vol. i, p. 608.

¹²⁸ Free Ch. of Scotland v. Overton, Appeal Cases, House of Lords, 1904; Winnebrenner v. Colder, 43 Pa. St., 244.

¹²⁹ Rules of Order, Scanlan, c. iii.

¹³⁰ Christ's Ev. L. C., 5 Pa. Co. Court, 121.

¹³¹ In re Zion, 8 Kulp. Pa., 239.

¹³² In re Hebron, 9 Phil., 609.

not give the church corporation any vested rights.¹³³

73. Consolidation, Control, Dissolution.—So far as the State law is concerned, two different denominations may form one corporation;¹³⁴ or two or more congregations of the same organization may form one corporation.¹³⁵ Where such consolidation is attempted, the new organization must have control of all the property.¹³⁶ So long as different congregations attempting to consolidate retain their respective identities, they do not form a single corporation.¹³⁷ It is a general rule that a corporation may be dissolved by taking the steps required by law. As there are various statutory provisions in the different States, each case had best be attended to by an attorney. In some States there is a provision that where a corporation fails to carry out its functions for a stated time, it thereby becomes dissolved. The omission of a parish for one year to elect officers, does not necessarily operate as a dissolution under such statute. In case of dissolution under a statute of that kind, the property of the church is not forfeited to the State.¹³⁸

[055]

74. Debt, Limited.—The amount of debt which the trustees of a religious society may be authorized to create, may be limited by its constitution.¹³⁹

75. Conditions, Effect.—Where \$1,000 was given defendants to erect and maintain forever a Lutheran church and prohibiting the grantee from alienating or disposing of or otherwise changing or encumbering the land by deed, a mortgage given to secure a legitimate debt was held valid, as the legal title was in the corporation and a court of equity could not refuse to enforce

¹³³ U. S. v. Church, 5 Utah, 361, 394, and 538; 15 Pac., 473; 16 Pac., 723; 18 Pac., 35.

¹³⁴ Neil v. Vestry, 8 Gill., 116.

¹³⁵ Madison v. Baptist, 26 N. Y., 570; Stokes v. Phelps, 47 Hun., 570.

¹³⁶ German, etc., 9 Pa. Co. C., 12.

¹³⁷ Evenson v. Ellingson, 72 Wis., 242; 39 N. W., 330.

¹³⁸ Toby v. Wareham, 54 Mass., 440.

¹³⁹ Weber v. Zimmerman, 22 Md., 156; Wyncoop v. Cong., 10 La., 185.

the mortgage for the payment of an honest debt under color of protecting a charitable use.¹⁴⁰ But property given a congregation for the maintenance of a church that becomes dissolved, reverts to the heirs as a resulting trust.¹⁴¹ A corporation that has been authorized to purchase land may execute a mortgage for the purchase money or a part of it without further authority.¹⁴² Where by an ancient agreement a meeting-house was to remain in a particular place, a vote of the congregation will not justify pulling it down, and an action of trespass will lie for razing it and damages will be given for the value of the building.¹⁴³ [056]

76. *Suits, Parties.*—When a church is incorporated, it should be sued in its corporate name; but when the bishop of the Catholic church holds the legal title to the land in litigation, he should be made a party.¹⁴⁴ And if there are two sets of officers contending for control, service of the papers upon the intruders may not be sufficient. The safer practice is to serve upon both.¹⁴⁵ A suit by the trustees of a religious society to restrain other parties claiming to be trustees from interfering in the management and control of the society property, is properly brought in the corporate name of the trustees and not in the name of the State.¹⁴⁶ [057]

77. *Incorporation, Sufficient.*—Where the articles of incorporation were drawn and signed in the form required by law, excepting as to the acknowledgment, and were recorded, and the corporation organized in good faith, it became a *de facto* corporation and was sufficient to entitle it to sue to prevent certain members from perverting the use of its property.¹⁴⁷

¹⁴⁰ *Magie v. German*, 13 N. J. Eq., 77.

¹⁴¹ *Esterbrook v. Tillinghast*, 71 Mass., 17.

¹⁴² *South v. Clapp*, 18 Barber, N. Y., 35.

¹⁴³ *Tilden v. Metcalf*, 2 Day, Conn., 259; *Heiss v. Vosburg*, 59 Wis., 532; 18 N. W., 518.

¹⁴⁴ *Keller v. Tracy*, 11 Ia., 530.

¹⁴⁵ *Verrian v. Methodist*, 44 Abbott Pr., 424.

¹⁴⁶ *Trustees v. Hoessli*, 13 Wis., 348.

¹⁴⁷ *Franke v. Mann*, 106 Wis., 118; 81 N. W., 1014.

78. *Dissolution, Fund.*—The corporation of a congregation can not by seceding and a majority vote dissolve the corporation where it is a part of a superior body.¹⁴⁸ But the courts have plenary powers over corporations under the United States jurisdiction, such as territories, and may dissolve a corporation.¹⁴⁹ The fact that the dissolution is contrary to, or authorized by church discipline, makes no difference as to granting the dissolution, as such discipline can not supersede the state law.¹⁵⁰ On dissolution of a religious corporation, the surplus fund derived from a legacy should be disposed of in the manner the court believes to be most in harmony with the will of the contributors to the fund, could they have foreseen the event.¹⁵¹

[058]

79. *Reorganization.*—A church corporation may reorganize and be reinstated into all rights that it formerly had.¹⁵² The steps to be taken to reorganize are usually provided by statute and should be closely followed. Upon the reorganization, the old corporation becomes terminated.¹⁵³

80. *Meetings, Majority, Quorum.*—In corporate meetings, meetings of boards, and meetings of committees duly called, a majority vote of those present determines the action of the body. If the membership is indefinite, those who attend such meeting constitute a quorum; but if the membership is definite, it requires a majority of the voting members to constitute a quorum, unless the law of the State or the constitution (articles of organization) or by-laws provide a different number.¹⁵⁴

[059]

¹⁴⁸ Den. v. Pilling, 24 N. J. L., 653.

¹⁴⁹ Mormon v. United States, 136 U. S., 1; 33 L. Ed., 639.

¹⁵⁰ In re Methodist, 67 Hun., 86.

¹⁵¹ In re Union, 6 Abb., N. C., 398.

¹⁵² First v. Brownell, 5 Hun., 464.

¹⁵³ Evenson v. Ellingson, 72 Wis., 242; 39 N. W., 330.

¹⁵⁴ Rules of Order, Scanlan, 20; Tartar v. Gibbs, 24 Md., 328; Sutter v. First, 42 Pa. St., 503.

Chapter VII. Superior Authority

81. *Protestant, Ministers, Bishop.*—In most church organizations the authority is divided into superior and inferior. In countries where there is an established Protestant church, the superior authority is first in the king and queen and secondly in the bishops. The inferior authority is in the ministers and secular officers of the church. Where there is no established church, the synod or bishop is the superior authority. Thus decisions of our courts usually apply to all churches alike.

82. *Roman Catholic Church, Pope, Bishops, Delegated.*—In the Roman Catholic Church the superior authority is first in the Pope and secondly in the other bishops. This superior authority is graded and some of it may be delegated, as in case of a Papal delegate. But the general rule that delegated authority can not be again delegated by the delegate without special authority applies to church matters.

[060]

83. *Bishop, Discipline, Clergy.*—Within his diocese the bishop is the executive officer, the legislature, and the judiciary; but he is subject to the superior authority of the Church. The bishop may make laws for his diocese, subject to the limitation of the general doctrine and discipline of the Church. He has original jurisdiction of all causes arising in his diocese, and may decide them in the first instance and inflict such penalties, suspension, or excommunication, in accordance with the canons of the Church, as he deems fit. The clergy are subject to his orders and discipline according to the canon law. However, without special contract, the bishop is not civilly liable for the salary of a priest under him, either while he is actually in the line of his assigned duties

or while waiting to be assigned.¹⁵⁵

[061]

84. *Local, Secular Matters.*—There is still another division of superior and inferior authority: the local corporation or congregation has nothing whatever to do with the doctrinal or disciplinary functions of the Church; but has only such powers and authority with regard to secular matters as is provided by the laws of the State or conferred by the articles of organization, charter, and by-laws. Also, unless there is some other rule to the contrary, only the male members who are over twenty-one years of age, have a voice and vote in such corporation.¹⁵⁶

85. *Unincorporated, Authority.*—When a church is not incorporated, all its elections and proceedings, so far as they are not contrary to the laws of the State, must be in accordance with the rules and regulations of the Church; and the rule that the inferior authority must give way to the superior authority in all matters within the limitations of the constitution and laws of the organization, prevails.¹⁵⁷ However, courts are not always clear on the last part of this rule.¹⁵⁸

[062]

86. *Tribunal, Action, Appeal.*—When any question arises and is being adjudicated in the tribunal of the church organization, either as an original action or on appeal, the State court will not interfere so long as the proceedings are in accordance with the rules and regulations of the church, unless some vested right to property is in question or some one's right as a citizen of the State or of the United States is being infringed.¹⁵⁹

87. *Spiritual Authority, Excommunication.*—Neither the Pope

¹⁵⁵ *Rose v. Vertin*, 46 Mich., 457; 9 N. W., 491; *Tuigg v. Sheehan*, 101 Pa. St., 363.

¹⁵⁶ Am. & Eng. Ency. of L., "Religious Societies."

¹⁵⁷ *Den. v. Bolton*, 12 N. J. L., 206.

¹⁵⁸ *Bonacum v. Murphy*, 65 Neb., 831, and 71 Neb., 463; 98 N. W., 1030; 102 N. W., 267, and 104 N. W., 180.

¹⁵⁹ *Bonacum v. Murphy*, 71 Neb., 463; 104 N. W., 180; *Bowden v. MacLeod*, 1 Edw., N. Y., 588.

nor the bishop has any but spiritual authority within the State.¹⁶⁰ The law of this country considers excommunication as expelling from membership; but does not tolerate interference with civil or property rights of citizens. Therefore, major excommunication *non tolerati*, is unlawful in the United States.¹⁶¹ However, a bishop is not liable for any expression of his opinion as to the extent of his episcopal authority nor for any act of omission in the exercise of his spiritual functions.¹⁶² The civil courts will not go behind a church authority to inquire as to excommunication, but may examine as to the competency of the tribunal according to the laws of the denomination.¹⁶³

88. Constitution, Limited, Decisions.—A written constitution is not necessary to prove the connection between a subordinate and superior ecclesiastical body; but it will be inferred from the circumstances of the case.¹⁶⁴ The superior may dissolve or reorganize an inferior body as a congregation.¹⁶⁵ In fact the superior authority, in religious matters, is plenary, excepting as limited by the laws of the State and the constitution of the Church.¹⁶⁶ The decisions of the ecclesiastical tribunals in all cases on doctrine, order, and discipline, are conclusive in the state courts.¹⁶⁷ [063]

[064]

¹⁶⁰ *Congregation v. Martin*, 4 Rob., La., 62.

¹⁶¹ *Fitzgerald v. Robinson*, 112 Mass., 371; *Grosvenor v. United States*, 118 Mass., 78; Post, 132.

¹⁶² *Wardens v. Blanc*, 8 Rob., La., 51.

¹⁶³ *Bowldin v. Alexander*, 82 U. S., 131; 21 L. Ed., 69.

¹⁶⁴ *Den. v. Pilling*, 24 N. J. L., 653.

¹⁶⁵ *Appeal of McAuley*, 77 Pa., 397.

¹⁶⁶ *Smith v. Swormstedt*, 57 U. S., 288; 14 L. Ed., 942.

¹⁶⁷ *Skilton v. Webster*, Bright, Pa., 203; *Mt. Helena Bp. Ch.*, 79 Miss., 488; 30 So. Rep., 714.

Chapter VIII. Inferior Authority

89. *Priesthood, Discipline.*—The inferior authority in the Church may be said to be in the priesthood, whose rights and duties are fixed by the canon law, but who are still further subject to the reasonable diocesan rules made by the bishop. The disciplinary relation of a priest to his bishop is substantially the same as that of a captain to his colonel, and implicit obedience in accordance with the discipline of the Church may be strictly enforced by the bishop in so far as it relates to ecclesiastical matters, including doctrine and discipline, in which the priest can not resort to the courts of the State, but must submit to the tribunals of the church.¹⁶⁸

90. *Congregation, Insubordinate, Discipline.*—The male members of a congregation are invested with no visitorial or controlling power, but only such authority as is given under the laws of incorporation.¹⁶⁹ Where an inferior organization, as a congregation, refuses to receive a clergyman appointed by the bishop, it is an act of insubordination to the ecclesiastical authority of the Church and in violation of its discipline, which authorizes the issuing of a peremptory mandamus commanding them to admit the clergyman.¹⁷⁰

91. *Pastor, Parish, Relation.*—When a clergyman's connection with a church had been duly dissolved, he ceased to be pastor of the church and an arrangement with the parish to retain his relation as pastor of such church was nugatory and void.¹⁷¹

¹⁶⁸ Smith v. Swormstedt, 57 U. S., 288; 14 L. Ed., 942.

¹⁶⁹ Tartar v. Gibbs, 24 Md., 323; Papalio v. Manusos, 113 Ill. App., 316.

¹⁷⁰ People v. Steele, 2 Barber, 397.

¹⁷¹ Stebbins v. Jennings, 10 Pickering, 172.

92. *Clergymen, Citizens.*—Clergymen residing in an incorporated town are not exempt from the performance of any duties required of citizens, unless such exemption is given by statute.¹⁷²

93. *Doctrine and Discipline, Authority.*—In all matters concerning doctrine and discipline of the Church, the inferior authority, such as ministers, priests, and deacons, as well as the congregation, must submit to the decision of the higher authority, whether bishop, synod, or council.¹⁷³

[066]

94. *Sect, Suit, Property.*—A number of people formed a congregation and became incorporated in 1810, the members being mostly of Presbyterian extraction. This independent congregation bought and paid for property, the title vesting in the corporation. In 1811 the congregation passed resolutions unanimously that it “would be imprudent and unscriptural” to establish a new religious sect, and voted to join the First Reformed Dutch Church, which had an organization of inferior and superior authority. The congregation was received into and became a part of the general organization, and remained so until 1860, when a majority of the congregation voted to employ a Methodist minister, and when his name was submitted to the superior authority, the “classis,” he was rejected as not belonging to the church. Then by a majority vote, the congregation seceded and assumed its first name, and thereafter brought suit for the church property. The court held that by joining the First Reformed Dutch Church, the title of the property vested in the congregation of that church as represented by its corporation, and that when the majority seceded and left the church, they had no right nor title to any of the property. And the court laid down the general rule that a majority of a church congregation may direct and control any church matters consistently with the particular and general laws of the organization or denomination to which it belongs, but

[067]

¹⁷² Elizabeth City v. Kennedy, Bush, 44, N. C. Law, 89.

¹⁷³ Diffendorf v. Reformed Church, 20 Johns., N. Y., 12.

not in violation of them.¹⁷⁴

95. Priest, Salary.—The fact that a bishop who holds the title to all the diocesan property in his own name in trust appoints a priest to the parish or as chaplain to a hospital, does not give the priest a right of action against the bishop personally for his salary. The relation of bishop and priest is not that of employer and employe, but is that of ecclesiastical superior and inferior.¹⁷⁵

96. Curate, Induction, Rector.—The *jus patronatus* of the Spanish law has been abrogated in Louisiana. The wardens of the church can not compel a bishop to institute a curate of their appointment, nor is he in any sense subordinate in his clerical functions to the wardens of any church within his diocese.¹⁷⁶ In the absence of a positive rule of the ecclesiastical body, no ceremony of induction is necessary for the rector of a parish.¹⁷⁷ A clergyman appointed “permanently” to a rectorship holds it for an indefinite period during the pleasure of the contracting parties, and either of the contracting parties may give the other notice of termination, and with the concurrence of the higher ecclesiastical authority of the diocese, a change may be made.¹⁷⁸ It is doubtful, however, whether in most States a permanent appointment would not be construed as a contract for life, determinable only for good cause.¹⁷⁹

97. Controversy, Tribunal, Decision.—When the clergyman and his parishioners submit a controversy to an ecclesiastical tribunal, the decision, if not impeached for good cause, is justification in the party conforming to it.¹⁸⁰ And a minister who submits to a church tribunal and is ousted after fair hearing and

¹⁷⁴ Sutton v. Trustees, 42 Pa., 503.

¹⁷⁵ Baxter v. McDonald, 155 N. Y., 83; 49 N. E., 667.

¹⁷⁶ Wardens v. Blanc, 8 Rob., 51.

¹⁷⁷ Young v. Ransom, 31 Barb., 49.

¹⁷⁸ Perry v. Wheeler, 75 Ky., 541.

¹⁷⁹ Sheldon v. Easton, 4 Mass., 281; Congregation v. Peres, 42 Tenn., 620; Thompson v. Catholic, 22 Mass., 469.

¹⁸⁰ Proprietors v. Proprietors, 48 Mass., 496.

trial, can not obtain a writ of mandamus from the civil court to compel his reinstatement.¹⁸¹ Also, after a minister has been dismissed in due manner by the tribunal of his denomination, the civil court will enjoin him from usurping his office.¹⁸²

98. Priest, Dwelling, Servant.—A Catholic priest in charge of a congregation at the will of the bishop and occupying a dwelling-house belonging to the church, is a servant and not a tenant, and his right to occupancy ceases with his services.¹⁸³ [069] The law is different with regard to a Methodist minister who is in charge of his parish by an annual conference and can not be ejected by the congregation or bishop until the next conference, as he has possession of the church property without superior authority.¹⁸⁴

99. Injunction, Bishop, Priest, Trial.—On application for an injunction to restrain the bishop from passing a sentence against a priest, the only ground on which a court can exercise jurisdiction is that the threatened action of the bishop will affect the civil rights of the priest.¹⁸⁵ A bishop can not remove a priest without an accusation, hearing, or trial, and forbid him to exercise any priestly function where such removal would cut off the priest's income and destroy his means of living in his vocation.¹⁸⁶ However, in the same case it was held that a complaint stating that the bishop failed and neglected to assign the plaintiff to the exercise of his office of priest in said diocese to the plaintiff's [070] damage, etc., failed to show that any right of property or civil right was involved and the priest was non-suited, while in the former case an injunction was issued against the bishop.¹⁸⁷

¹⁸¹ Dempsey v. North, 98 Mich., 444; 57 N. W., 267.

¹⁸² Hackett v. Mt. Pleasant, 46 Ark., 291.

¹⁸³ Chatard v. O'Donovan, 80 Ind., 20.

¹⁸⁴ Brestor v. Burr, 120 N. Y., 427; 8 L. R. A., 710; 24 N. E., 937.

¹⁸⁵ Walker v. Wainwright, 16 Barb., 486.

¹⁸⁶ O'Hara v. Stack, 90 Pa., 477.

¹⁸⁷ Stack v. O'Hara, 98 Pa. St., 213.

100. *Confession, Privacy, Authority.*—A Catholic priest, although about to administer an office of his religion to a sick person at the latter's request, has no legal authority, by virtue of his priestly character, to forcibly remove from the room a person lawfully there.¹⁸⁸

101. *Debts, Permission, Presumed.*—Notwithstanding a rule or ecclesiastical law of the church that a pastor shall not contract debts in the name or for the sake of the church without the written permission of the bishop, such written permission is not evidence that debts contracted under it are the legal debts of the bishop. The authority which bishops delegate to priests is under the ecclesiastical law and *prima facie* ecclesiastical authority, and must be presumed to be so in the absence of all evidence to the contrary.¹⁸⁹

[071]

102. *Official Acts, Subscriptions.*—The official acts of a minister coming in question incidentally, unless contrary to the statute, are as valid as the official acts of any other officer.¹⁹⁰ A clergyman who was engaged to conduct dedication services and was requested by the officers of the local corporation to solicit subscriptions for paying off the indebtedness of the church, but was not appointed agent to receive such subscriptions, had no authority to accept a subscription for the corporation.¹⁹¹

103. *Exemptions, Clergy.*—The exemptions given ministers by the statutes of some States are liberally construed.¹⁹² Without any statutory exemption, the clergy are liable for all duties required of other citizens.¹⁹³

104. *Minister, Contributions, Deposed.*—No religious teacher or minister can be enjoined from receiving voluntary

¹⁸⁸ *Cooper v. McKenna*, 104 Mass., 284.

¹⁸⁹ *Leahy v. Williams*, 141 Mass., 345.

¹⁹⁰ *State v. Winkle*, 14 N. H., 480.

¹⁹¹ *Methodist v. Sherman*, 36 Wis., 404.

¹⁹² *Baldwin v. McKlinch*, 1 Me., 102.

¹⁹³ *Elizabeth City v. Kennedy*, 44 N. C., 89.

contributions, although he has been deposed by some ecclesiastical tribunal.¹⁹⁴

105. *Fees, Usages, Excess.*—The fees of a priest of the Catholic Church are regulated by the laws and usages of that Church, and where in this country the pew rent and collections go for the support of the priest and the current church expenses, a priest is not accountable for the excess of such collections over these expenditures.¹⁹⁵ [072]

106. *Salary, Fees.*—Under the act of March, 1814, incorporating a congregation, the congregation, being the legal owners and temporal administrators of the property which it was authorized to hold, had the exclusive power to fix the salary of the parish priest or the tariff of fees for marriages, burial, etc. No such power could be exercised under that act by the Pope or any bishop.¹⁹⁶

107. *Clergyman, Salary.*—Where a clergyman agreed with a congregation that the salary should be what could be raised by subscription, the congregation was bound to use due diligence in procuring subscriptions, and as it did so, that was all that the clergyman could recover.¹⁹⁷

108. *Curate, Services.*—In an action by a curate against a religious corporation for personal services, the court will not inquire into the spiritual relations existing between the parties, but will examine their legal rights only.¹⁹⁸

109. *Minister, Dismissal, Money Advanced.*—After a parish has voted to dismiss the minister, it is not competent to prove irregular conduct or immorality in answer to his claim for salary, without alleging it in the vote of dismissal.¹⁹⁹ [073] In Illinois it was

¹⁹⁴ Calkins v. Cheney, 92 Ill., 463.

¹⁹⁵ St. Patrick's v. Daly, 116 Ill., 76; 4 N. E., 241.

¹⁹⁶ Congregation v. Martin, 4 Rob., La., 62.

¹⁹⁷ Meyer v. Baptist, 38 Vt., 614.

¹⁹⁸ Congregation v. Martin, 4 Rob., 62.

¹⁹⁹ Whittmore v. Fourth, 68 Mass., 306.

held that a priest who advanced money from his private resources for improving church property, had an equitable lien upon the property for all the money advanced, with legal interest.²⁰⁰ But in Pennsylvania, where a priest under the direction of the bishop built a church in his parish for mission purposes, and in doing so expended some of his own money, it was held that in the absence of proof of any rule or custom of the Catholic Church making the payment of such expenses obligatory on the parish, that he could not recover the money so expended from his congregation.²⁰¹

[074]

²⁰⁰ *St. Patrick's v. Daly*, 4 N. E., 241; 116 Ill., 76.

²⁰¹ *Tuigg v. Treacy*, 104 Pa., 493.

Chapter IX. Membership

110. *Business, Religious Membership.*—Unless there is some other law or rule to the contrary, the male members of the congregation over twenty-one years of age constitute the business membership of a religious society.²⁰² But the question of membership of religious societies or congregations is left to be determined by the rules of the religious denomination to which they belong.²⁰³ And where a condition of membership is that the person must contribute to the support of the church and be a communicant, if he is not a communicant he is not entitled to vote.²⁰⁴

111. *Regular, Doctrines, Support.*—The ones who adhere and submit to the regular order and doctrines of the church, although a minority, constitute the true congregation.²⁰⁵ At least two things must concur to qualify a person as a voter: first, stated attendance at divine worship in the congregation; and, second, contribution to the support of the church.²⁰⁶ The list of members kept by the clerk or secretary of the congregation is evidence of membership.²⁰⁷ A person who denies any part of the system of theology received and taught by the denomination is not a member of the church.²⁰⁸ [075]

112. *Factions, Authority.*—Where two factions of a church, each claiming to be the church, try members of the other faction,

²⁰² Tartar v. Gibbs, 24 Md., 323.

²⁰³ Heiss v. Murphy, 40 Wis., 276, 278; Den. v. Pilling, 24 N. J. L., 653.

²⁰⁴ Weckerly v. Geyer, 11 Ser. R. Pa., 35.

²⁰⁵ Weinbrenner v. Colder, 43 Pa. St., 244.

²⁰⁶ People v. Tuthil, 31 N. Y., 550.

²⁰⁷ Price v. Lyon, 14 Conn., 280.

²⁰⁸ Suter v. Spangler, 4 Phil., 331.

a court may determine which of the factions is the authorized authority or that the action taken by either or both of them is nugatory for want of authority.²⁰⁹

113. *Faith, Burial.*—Whether a person died in the faith of the Roman Catholic Church so as to be entitled to burial in its cemetery, is not a question within the jurisdiction of civil courts, but must be decided by the ecclesiastical authorities.²¹⁰

[076]

114. *Rules, Membership.*—Every denomination has the right to prescribe by rules, its constitution, or its by-laws, the conditions of membership; and any one who will not subscribe to and practise the doctrines of the denomination is not a member.²¹¹

115. *Minor.*—Where the legal members of a society that is incorporated consist of male members of the church of full age, when minor sons become of age, they become legal members of the corporation, provided they remain in the church.²¹²

116. *Officers, Non-Members.*—It has been held that a person may be an officer or member of the church corporation or its temporal concerns without being a member of the denomination.²¹³

[077]

117. *Debts, Unincorporated Parish.*—In Connecticut members of an ecclesiastical society formed by voluntary association under the statutes of the State are not individually liable for the debts of such society.²¹⁴ But where there is no statute on the subject, the members of an unincorporated parish are liable for lawful debts contracted or ratified by them, and their property may be levied on for such debts incurred or judgments

²⁰⁹ Smith v. Pedigo, 145 Ind., 36; 32 L. R. A., 836; 33 N. E., 777.

²¹⁰ McGuire v. Trustees, 54 Hun., 207.

²¹¹ Church v. Halverson, 42 Minn., 503; 44 N. W., 563; Day v. Bolton, 12 N. J. L., 206; Den. v. Pilling, 24 N. J. L., 653.

²¹² Osgood v. Bradley, 7 Me., 411.

²¹³ Baptist v. Witherell, 24 Am. Dec., 223; 3 The Catholic Encyclopedia, 755; Contra: First R. P. Ch. v. Bowden, 10 Abb., N. C., 1. See post 134, 156.

²¹⁴ Jewett v. Thames, 16 Conn., 511.

rendered while they are members of the society.²¹⁵ The members of an unincorporated parish may be sued to recover the salary of a deceased pastor up to the time of his death.²¹⁶

118. *Execution, Property.*—While an execution against a territorial parish may be levied on the property of a member of the parish, it can not be levied on property of a person who ceased to be a member before the levy.²¹⁷

119. *Incorporated, Subscriptions.*—The members of an incorporated poll parish are not individually liable on a judgment and execution against the corporation, excepting on the unpaid subscriptions.²¹⁸

120. *Expelled, Merits.*—Mandamus can not be resorted to to restore a member regularly expelled from his church, as a court will not inquire into the merits of the case.²¹⁹

121. *Lay Members, Appointed.*—Where the statute provides that two lay members of the corporation of a Catholic parish shall be appointed annually “by the committee of the congregation,” [078] the members of the congregation have no right to elect said two members, and those appointed in the proper manner are lawful officers.²²⁰

[079]

²¹⁵ Chick v. Trevett, 20 Me., 462; Allen v. M. E. Church, 127 Ia., 96; 102 N. W., 808; 69 L. R. A., 255.

²¹⁶ Sheehy v. Blake, 72 Wis., 411; 39 N. W., 479; 9 L. R. A., 564.

²¹⁷ Chase v. Merrimac, 34 Mass., 564; Bigelow v. Congregation, 15 Vt., 370.

²¹⁸ Richardson v. Butterfield, 60 Mass., 191.

²¹⁹ State v. Hebrew, 31 La. Ann., 205; 33 Am. Rep., 217; Grosvenor v. United States, 118 Mass., 78; Watson v. Garbin, 54 Mo., 358.

²²⁰ State v. Getty, 69 Conn., 286; 37 At., 188.

Chapter X. Heresy And Secession

122. *Mother Church, Control.*—A majority of the members of a congregation can not by their vote leave the church and transfer the property of the congregation to another church so long as any portion of the congregation remains faithful to the mother church of which such congregation forms a part. Such minority shall retain control of the property.²²¹

123. *Seceders, Funds.*—Nor can seceders from a religious denomination retain the funds in their hands as trustees on the ground that they were members of the society when the funds accrued.²²² The title to church property in a divided congregation is in that part of the congregation which is acting in harmony with its own law; and the ecclesiastical laws and principles which were accepted among them before the dispute began are the standards for determining which party is right.²²³

124. *Society, Foreign Language, Independent.*—The formation of a society distinct from the rest of the congregation for the purpose of instruction in a portion of the doctrine of the same church in a foreign language is not a separation from the congregation, although it has its own minister and officers.²²⁴ Where an independent congregation of one denomination votes unanimously to go over to another denomination, and the title to the church property is in the parish corporation, the seceders take with them the church property.²²⁵

²²¹ Free Church of Scotland v. Overton, Appeal Cases, House of Lords, 1904; Fuchs v. Meisel, 102 Mich., 357; 32 L. R. A., 92; 60 N. W., 773.

²²² Methodist v. Wood, 5 Ohio, 12.

²²³ McGinnis v. Watson, 41 Pa. St., 9.

²²⁴ German v. Seibert, 3 Pa. St., 282.

²²⁵ Sutter v. First, 42 Pa. St., 503.

125. *Subordinate, Incorporated.*—A religious society subordinate to church judicatures, which declares itself independent and becomes incorporated under the general law of the state and subsequently purchases land and takes title in the name of the corporation, holds such land independently of such church judicatures.²²⁶

126. “Church,” Seceders, Debt.—Where a religious society amended its constitution as provided therein, those who adhered to the amended constitution constituted the “church,” and those who refused to do so were seceders.²²⁷ After seceding, a member of a parish is liable for a debt existing at the time of his secession.²²⁸ [081]

127. *Bible, Constitution, Withdrawal.*—A religious organization that takes the Bible as its constitution can not declare a member a seceder who interprets it contrary to the Augsburg Confession of the denomination.²²⁹ What amounts to a voluntary withdrawal of members from a religious association, is a question of law.²³⁰

128. *Majority, Obligation.*—The fact that a majority of the members of a religious corporation secede therefrom by a vote, does not affect its obligation entered into prior thereto.²³¹ Two factions of a church separating and keeping up different organizations may both still retain their membership in the denomination.²³²

129. *Division, Funds.*—Where there is a division in a denomination by the secession of a part of the members from

²²⁶ Miller v. Gable, 2 Den., N. Y., 492; Eis v. Croze, 149 Mich., 62; 112 N. W., 943; Dressen v. Brameier, 56 Ia., 756; 9 N. W., 193; Amish v. Gelhaus, 71 Ia., 170; 32 N. W., 318.

²²⁷ Lamm v. Cain, 129 Ind., 486; 14 L. R. A., 518.

²²⁸ Fernald v. Lewis, 6 Me., 264.

²²⁹ Trustees v. Henschell, 48 Minn., 494; 51 N. W., 477.

²³⁰ Perry v. Tupper, 74 N. C., 722.

²³¹ Wanner v. Emanuel, 174 Pa., 466.

²³² West v. Ottesen, 80 Wis., 62; 49 N. W., 24.

[082]

the mother church, the Legislature has no authority to divide the funds and give a part to the seceding division.²³³

130. *Methodist, Slaveholding, Non-Slaveholding, Quarrel, Schism, Secession.*—The division of the Methodist church into distinct organizations of slaveholding and non-slaveholding States, was not a secession and neither division lost its interest in the common property.²³⁴ A quarrel in a congregation growing out of an illegal election followed by the majority excluding the minority from the church, is not a schism, and is no ground for a division of the church property.²³⁵ The secession of a whole congregation does not carry with it the church property; and those who are left and adhere to the mother church retain control of the property.²³⁶ When the seceders from one church join another, they forfeit all claim to any interest held by the former and lose identity with it.²³⁷

[083]

²³³ *Second v. First*, 23 Conn., 255.

²³⁴ *Smith v. Swormstedt*, 57 U. S., 288; 14 L. Ed., 942.

²³⁵ *Nelson v. Benson*, 69 Ill., 27; *Brown v. Porter*, 10 Mass., 93.

²³⁶ *Page v. Crosby*, 41 Mass., 211.

²³⁷ *Harper v. Straws*, 53 Ky., 48; *Hale v. Everett*, 53 N. H., 9; *Wiswell v. First*, 14 Ohio St., 31; *Reorganized v. Church*, 60 Fed., 937; 32 L. R. A., 838; *Fernstler v. Seibert*, 114 Pa., 196; 6 At., 165.

Chapter XI. Excommunication

131. Definitions, Minor.—Excommunication, as construed in law, is the official announcement by the superior authority of the termination of membership in a religious body and the forfeiture of spiritual privileges of the church. It is one of the methods of discipline in the nature of expulsion from membership in a fraternity, and the fact of expulsion from a church is conclusive proof that the person expelled is not a member of such church. Whether the excommunication was wrong or not can not be examined into in the courts of the State, and such expelled member can not maintain a suit in relation to church property nor vote for trustees.²³⁸

132. Major Excommunication.—As excommunication *non tolerati* affects the rights of citizenship, it is not lawful in England nor the United States. To say that A. has been excommunicated in any form, if untrue, is slander.²³⁹

[084]

133. Vote, Sentence.—When a vote of excommunication from a church has been passed in the Congregational church and the offender thereby declared no longer a member, the sentence may be promulgated by being read in the presence of the congregation by the pastor.²⁴⁰

134. Trustees, Disqualified.—The trustees of a church who have been excommunicated are not thereby disqualified in law to act as trustees.²⁴¹

²³⁸ Shannon v. First, 42 Ky., 253.

²³⁹ Servatius v. Pichel, 34 Wis., 292; McGrath v. Finn, 16 Alb. L. J., 186; Morasse v. Borchee, 151 Mass., 567; 25 N. E., 74.

²⁴⁰ Farnsworth v. Storrs, 59 Mass., 412.

²⁴¹ Bowldin v. Alexander, 15 Wall., 131; 21 L. Ed., 69; Ante, sec. 116, post 156.

135. *Devise, Void.*—A parent may leave money to a child payable in yearly instalments on condition that said child shall continue to be a member of a particular church and attend the regular meetings thereof, and in case he fail so to do that the bequest be thereupon paid to a missionary society. Such a devise is not contrary to the constitution of the State of Wisconsin and is not void for any other reason.²⁴²

[085]

136. *Fraternity, Excommunicated, Bequest.*—Where a church member was also a member of an insurance fraternity connected with his church, the constitution of which required that every member of the fraternity should be and remain a practical Roman Catholic, when he was excommunicated from membership in the church he thereby forfeited his benefit certificate in such fraternity.²⁴³ Also, a condition that a bequest shall be forfeited if the legatee should not marry a Protestant wife, the daughter of Protestant parents who have always been Protestants, was held to be valid and not an infringement of any constitutional right.²⁴⁴

137. *Action, Expulsion.*—An action can not be maintained against the parish corporation for expulsion from the church.²⁴⁵

138. *Forfeiture of Membership.*—Any member may forfeit his membership in a church.²⁴⁶

139. *Insubordination, Expulsion, Hearing.*—The authorities in the church, under its rules and discipline, have a right to exclude members in the church, for insubordination.²⁴⁷ If the church has no rules as to expulsion of members, the common law prevails, and a member can not be expelled without due notice and fair hearing.²⁴⁸

[086]

²⁴² In re Paulson's will, 127 Wis., 612; 107 N. W., 484.

²⁴³ Barry v. C. K. of W., 119 Wis., 362; 96 N. W., 797.

²⁴⁴ In re Knox, 25 Ch. Div., 542.

²⁴⁵ Harden v. Baptist, 51 Mich., 137; 16 N. W., 311.

²⁴⁶ Taylor v. Edison, 58 Mass., 522; Gray v. Christian, 137 Mass., 329.

²⁴⁷ Fulbright v. Higgenbotham, 133 Mo., 668; 34 S. W., 875.

²⁴⁸ Jones v. State, 28 Neb., 495; 44 N. W., 658; 7 L. R. A., 325.

140. *Injunction, Mandamus, Sepulture.*—An injunction will not be granted to prevent the expulsion of a member contrary to the charter and by-laws of the denomination; but if a member be expelled without warrant of law, he has his remedy by mandamus for reinstatement.²⁴⁹ A person who has been expelled can not maintain an action for restoration in order to enjoy the right of sepulture, as it is premature.²⁵⁰

141. *Expulsion, Illegal.*—The attempt of a minority of a church to expel the majority of the members and turn over the property to another denomination is illegal. However, the same would be true if it were done by the majority.²⁵¹

142. *Freedom, Faith, Doctrine.*—The constitution in declaring the freedom of all men to worship God according to the dictates of their own consciences, does not give a church member the right to repudiate the faith and doctrine on which the church was founded, and at the same time to insist on his right to exercise and enjoy the benefits and privileges of a member of such church.²⁵² Every person joining a church, impliedly, if not expressly, agrees to conform to its rules and to submit to its authority and discipline.²⁵³ A person who has been expelled from a religious society can not maintain an action for services rendered the society while he was a member.²⁵⁴

[087]

[088]

²⁴⁹ Hamel v. German, 1 Weekly Note Cases, 411.

²⁵⁰ State v. Hebrew, 31 La. Ann., 205; 33 Am. Rep., 217.

²⁵¹ Deadrick v. Lampson, 58 Tenn., 523.

²⁵² Smith v. Pedigo, 145 Ind., 361; 32 L. R. A., 838.

²⁵³ Lucas v. Case, 9 Bush, Ky., 297.

²⁵⁴ Grosvenor v. U. S., 118 Mass., 78.

Chapter XII. Elections

143. *Time, Place, Void.*—Where a religious society that is incorporated holds an election for trustees, which is held at the wrong time or place, the election is void.²⁵⁵

144. *Voting, Communicants, Attendance.*—A by-law of a church that prohibited any person whose pew rent was in arrears more than two years from voting at a church meeting, is valid and reasonable.²⁵⁶ Where a charter of a religious society allowed only members being communicants to vote after they had attained the age of eighteen years, to entitle a member of the congregation to vote it was necessary that he should have taken the sacraments after the age of eighteen years.²⁵⁷ Where the right to vote was limited to members who contributed not less than ten shillings annually toward the support of the church, those who were challenged for want of complying with the rule can not do so after being challenged and then vote.²⁵⁸ Stated attendance at divine worship in the church, congregation, or society, and contribution to the support of such church, may be made the tests of the right of a person to be a voter at an election. The attendance of a wife or children of the family is not sufficient to confer the right to vote on the husband or father.²⁵⁹

145. *Voters, Poll List.*—Parol evidence is admissible to prove the number of persons entitled to vote in a church society,

²⁵⁵ *Miller v. English*, 21 N. J. L., 317; 10 Cyc., 320-328; *Rules of Order*, Scanlan, 17.

²⁵⁶ *State v. Crowell*, 9 N. J. L., 391; *Commonwealth v. Cain*, 5 Ser. & R., Pa., 510.

²⁵⁷ *Wegerle v. Geyer*, 11 Ser. & R., Pa., 35.

²⁵⁸ *Juker v. Commonwealth*, 20 Pa. St., 484; *St. Luke's v. Matthews*, 4 Desau, S. C., 578; *State v. Crowell*, 9 N. J. L., 391.

²⁵⁹ *People v. Tuthill*, 31 N. Y., 550.

notwithstanding that there is a register of names of the stated hearers in such church kept by the clerk of the trustees.

146. Notice, Quorum, Majority, Strangers.—It is not necessary that a majority of the members of a religious society be present to constitute a corporate meeting. Those present at a regularly called meeting of which due notice has been given to all the members, constitute a quorum; and, in the absence of a rule to the contrary, a majority of the votes cast carries any question.²⁶⁰ The presence of strangers, unless they vote, will not vitiate the proceedings. If they should vote, unless their votes determine the election, it will not be void.²⁶¹ The casting of a few illegal votes that would not change the result of the election does not make it void.²⁶² [090]

147. Challenge, Ground.—The right of a person to vote at any meeting may be challenged. The proper time to challenge a voter is when he offers his vote. After his vote has been received it can not be thrown out on the ground that he was disqualified.²⁶³ A church election for which due notice has been given, that has been fairly conducted, and all the requirements of the statute or rules of the church complied with, is conclusive.²⁶⁴ Without due notice, all proceedings are void.²⁶⁵

148. By-Laws, Usage.—If there is no law of a religious society determining the mode of conducting an election, the corporation may provide by-laws therefor; and if the corporation should fail to make such by-laws, a long established usage will govern.²⁶⁶ Also, if the time an election is to be held is provided for, but the manner of conducting it is not, the meeting may be conducted [091]

²⁶⁰ Rules of Order, Scanlan, 18, 20; 10 Cyc, 329.

²⁶¹ Madison v. Baptist, 32 Howard's Pr., 335.

²⁶² People v. Tuthill, 31 N. Y., 550.

²⁶³ Hart v. Harvey, 32 Barb., N. Y., 55.

²⁶⁴ Alexander v. Bowers, 79 S. W., 342.

²⁶⁵ Rules of Order, Scanlan, 18, 20, 23; People v. Peck, 11 Wend., N. Y., 604.

²⁶⁶ Rules of Order, Scanlan, 9; Gipson v. Morris, 83 S. W., Tex., 226; McCrary's Am. L. of Elections, secs. 298-300.

according to established usage.²⁶⁷

149. *Ballot, Hand Vote.*—The vote of a religious society at an annual meeting for the election of officers that the officers shall always be chosen by ballot, does not vitiate an election of officers by hand vote at a subsequent annual meeting. But a provision in the constitution or by-laws requiring a ballot must be complied with.²⁶⁸

150. *Hold Over, Successors.*—When the election of the new trustees is invalid, the old trustees hold over until there will have been a valid election of their successors.²⁶⁹ But where a board that was illegally elected employed a minister who had no notice of such illegality, he was entitled to his compensation according to the contract.²⁷⁰

151. *Majority, Votes Cast.*—Where the majority of a congregation protested against the proposed candidate, but failed to vote for any one, such candidate who received the greatest number of votes cast, was lawfully elected.²⁷¹

[092]

152. *By-Law, Tickets.*—When a by-law provides that “if besides the names there are other things upon the tickets, such tickets are not to be counted,” a ballot having an engraved eagle on it should be rejected.²⁷² However, in a very recent case under a statute that specifically provided what should be printed on the general election ballot, and in addition thereto the Union Labor label was printed thereon, the court held that the statute should be strictly construed in favor of the voter and that the ticket should be counted.²⁷³

²⁶⁷ *Juker v. Commonwealth*, 20 Pa., 484.

²⁶⁸ *Rules of Order*, Scanlan, 23-27; *Wardens v. Pope*, 8 Gray, Mass., 140.

²⁶⁹ *Den. v. Pilling*, 24 N. J. L., 653.

²⁷⁰ *Vestry v. Matthews*, 4 Desau, S. C., 578.

²⁷¹ *Cooley's Con. Lim.*, 619; *McCrary's Am. L. of Elections*, sec. 197; *Rules of Order*, Scanlan, 24-27.

²⁷² *Commonwealth v. Woelper*, 3 Ser. & R., Pa., 29.

²⁷³ *In re Peters*, 112 N. Y. Sup., 339.

Chapter XIII. Officers

153. *Charter, By-Laws.*—The articles of organization or the charter which is the constitution of the corporation may provide who may be officers of a religious society and limit their authority. The constitution usually gives further authority to make by-laws which are binding on the officers as well as on the members.²⁷⁴

154. *Unincorporated Church, Incorporated.*—The officers of an unincorporated church can only be elected by the members of the church, unless there is some law of the State or rule of the church that provides for appointing them. In an incorporated congregation, the charter and by-laws of the corporation determine whether the officers shall be elected or appointed.²⁷⁵

155. *Trustees, Control.*—A statute passed in 1813 providing that a certificate of incorporation by the bishop, vicar-general, pastor of the church, and two others selected by them and their successors shall be a body corporate, does not constitute the trustees the corporation in place of the congregation so as to make the acts of a majority of the trustees binding on the corporation in the absence of proof of other authority.²⁷⁶ Under the statutes of Louisiana providing for the incorporation of congregations for the purpose of administration and revenues, it was held that the corporation had full control and was responsible to the congregation alone and could not be controlled by the clergy. The congregation had the right to elect others in the places of those

²⁷⁴ *Gram v. Prussia*, 36 N. Y., 161.

²⁷⁵ *Wall v. Johnson*, 140 Ind., 445; 39 N. E., 251; *Simmons v. Allison*, 118 N. C., 763.

²⁷⁶ *People v. St. Anthony*, 109 N. Y., 512; 17 N. E., 408.

amoved by reason of their misuse or abuse of their powers.²⁷⁷ And in Massachusetts, under the law for incorporating Catholic parishes, no one but the trustees have any power.²⁷⁸

156. Membership, Office.—Where church membership is necessary to hold office in the church corporation, it is a binding condition precedent.²⁷⁹ An officer who withdraws or is expelled from a religious organization thereby terminates his office.²⁸⁰ [095]

157. Certificate of Election.—A certificate of election of officers is *prima facie* evidence thereof, but the truth may be shown *aliunde* and a wrong certificate may be cancelled by a judgment of a competent court on a writ of *quo warranto* or proceeding under a statute of the State. Also, if the certificate does not conform to the law, it is insufficient.²⁸¹

158. Term, Successors, Contest.—Where there is no term of office fixed, the presumption is that an officer continues as such until proof to the contrary is established,²⁸² or until his successor shall have been elected and shall have qualified.²⁸³ Also, the officers elected for a certain term can not be removed by electing new officers before the end of the term.²⁸⁴ When officers or committees have been elected “for the ensuing year,” they shall hold office until superseded by their duly elected successors. Where two sets of officers were elected at a meeting of a religious corporation and the set that was elected according

²⁷⁷ *Congregation v. Martin*, 4 Rob., 62; *Wardens v. Blanc*, 8 Rob., 51; *St. Andrew's Ch. v. Schaughnessy*, 63 Neb., 792; 89 N. W., 261.

²⁷⁸ *Enos v. Church*, 187 Mass., 40; 72 N. E., 253.

²⁷⁹ *Ross v. Crockett*, 14 La. Ann., 811.

²⁸⁰ *Laight v. Noe*, 12 Howard's Pr., 497; *Contra: In re Williams*, 105 N. Y. S., 1105; *Ante*, 116, 134.

²⁸¹ *People v. Lacoste*, 37 N. Y., 192; *Fadness v. Braunberg*, 73 Wis., 257; 41 N. W., 84; *McCrary on Am. L. of Elections*, secs. 209, 264; 10 Cyc, 347; *People v. Nappa*, 89 Mich., 232; 50 N. W., 846.

²⁸² *Hendrickson v. Shotwell*, 1 N. J. Eq., 577.

²⁸³ *Congregation v. Sperry*, 10 Conn., 200; 10 Cyc, 319.

²⁸⁴ *Den. v. Pilling*, 24 N. J. L., 653.

[096]

to the charter continued in office by appointment thereafter, it was too late for the irregularly elected officers to make a contest for the offices after the term for which they had been elected had expired.²⁸⁵

159. *By-Laws, Preside.*—At an election of trustees under by-laws that provide that certain officers shall preside, if there are no such officers members may be selected to preside in their places.²⁸⁶

[097]

160. *Note, Overdraft, Interest.*—The president and secretary of a church corporation have no authority to make a promissory note unless authorized by the board of trustees.²⁸⁷ Neither has the treasurer authority to make an overdraft on a bank with the action of the trustees.²⁸⁸ The trustees of a parish, however, may make a note binding the congregation for the payment of the money used in building a church.²⁸⁹ But when the trustees have an interest in the transaction, adverse to the congregation, they are disqualified from acting.²⁹⁰ When trustees had claims against the congregation which they included with other claims that third parties had against the church, they could not put them in a judgment note so as to get a lien upon the church property. When officers do not bind the congregation, they usually bind themselves.²⁹¹ The trustees of an unincorporated church can not bind it beyond the expressed powers granted by the members.²⁹²

²⁸⁵ *Smith v. Erb*, 5 Gill., Md., 437.

²⁸⁶ *People v. Peck*, 11 Wend., N. Y., 604.

²⁸⁷ *Catron v. First*, 46 Ia., 106; *People v. St. Anthony's*, 109 N. Y., 512; 17 N. E., 408.

²⁸⁸ *Columbia v. Gospel*, 127 N. Y., 361.

²⁸⁹ *First v. Caughey*, 85 Pa., 271.

²⁹⁰ *San Antonia v. Adams*, 87 Tex., 125; 26 S. W., 1040; *Hill v. Rich*, 119 Mo., 9; 24 S. W., 223.

²⁹¹ *Hewitt v. Wheeler*, 22 Conn., 577; *Devos v. Gray*, 22 Ohio, 159; *Klopp v. Moore*, 6 Kan., 27; *Neil v. Spencer*, 5 Ill. App., 461; *United v. Vandusen*, 37 Wis., 54.

²⁹² *Miller v. Church*, 4 Phil., 48.

161. Board, Control.—When the laws of the organization give control of matters to the board of trustees, the majority of the members of the church can not control the action of the trustees contrary to the usages and regulations of the church.²⁹³

162. Treasurer, Accepting a Draft.—A parish treasurer has no authority under any condition to bind the corporation by accepting a draft in favor of a third person. A treasurer elected for the purpose of receiving and investing funds in his individual name, holds such funds as trustee for the church and is subject as such trustee to a court of equity. Persons claiming to be trustees of a church but never getting possession of their offices or the property of the church, can not maintain an action against other persons who are in possession and have been duly elected.²⁹⁴ [098]

163. Note, Trustees.—A church will not be bound by a note which was executed by two of its trustees and sent around to other trustees to sign it, where there was no vote of the board of trustees at an authorized meeting to borrow or to execute such note.²⁹⁵ A meeting of a board must be called as required by law or the by-laws of the organization, and in the absence of any such all members must be notified a reasonable time before the time fixed for holding the meeting. However, if all the trustees are present and agree to hold a meeting it is valid; but it would be well to put such consent in writing and have all the members sign it.²⁹⁶

164. Money, Powers.—The treasurer of a congregation has no right to return to members moving out of the parish a part of the money paid for the church by them.²⁹⁷ Officers of a corporation have no powers only those conferred upon them by the charter

²⁹³ Brunnenmeyer v. Buhre, 32 Ill., 183.

²⁹⁴ N. Baptist v. Parker, 36 Barb., N. Y., 171.

²⁹⁵ Dennison v. Austin, 15 Wis., 334.

²⁹⁶ United v. Vandusen, 37 Wis., 54; MacLaury v. Hart, 121 N. Y., 636; 24 N. E., 1013.

²⁹⁷ Vestry v. Barksdale, 1 Strobb. Eq., S. C., 197.

[099]

and by-laws of the corporation or by a majority vote of a duly called meeting of the congregation.²⁹⁸ When the trustees of a church are authorized to execute contracts for the church, they should act as a body or delegate the power to one of their number or ratify the acts of one of their number.²⁹⁹ The individual disjointed action of trustees of a religious society, at various times and places, although assented to by a majority, is not the action of the board, and is not binding on the society. To make the action of the board of trustees binding, they must duly meet and by a vote determine their action.³⁰⁰

[100]

165. *De Facto Officers.*—The acts of *de facto* officers can not usually be questioned in a collateral proceeding, such as to set aside a conveyance, when the merits of the question do not involve the election.³⁰¹ Being elected does not alone make a person a *de facto* officer; but he must also be acting in the particular office to which he claims to have been elected.³⁰² But one who has entered into a contract with the officers of a congregation is estopped from denying their authority to make such contract.³⁰³

166. *Trustees, Thanks, Charge.*—Where trustees have taken care of funds without charge, the only entry kept being a vote of thanks from time to time, they could not afterward charge a commission on the moneys handled by them for such services.³⁰⁴

167. *Discretion, Excommunication.*—A court has no authority to control the exercise of the judgment or discretion of the officers of a church in the management of its funds so long as they do not

²⁹⁸ New v. Gress, 89 Ga., 125.

²⁹⁹ 10 Cyc, 776-9; In re Denny, 156 Ind., 104; 59 N. E., 359; 51 L. R. A., 722.

³⁰⁰ Rules of Order, Scanlan, 21; U. S. v. Balm, 144 U. S., 1; 12 Sup. Ct. R., 507; 36 L. Ed., 321; The Catholic Encyclopedia, vol. i, 289.

³⁰¹ Cicotte v. Anciaux, 53 Mich., 227; 18 N. W., 793.

³⁰² Trustees v. Halverson, 42 Minn., 503; 44 N. W., 663.

³⁰³ Skinner v. Richardson, 76 Wis., 464; 45 N. W., 318; Dennison v. Auston, 15 Wis., 334.

³⁰⁴ Vestry v. Barksdale, 1 Strobb. S. C. Eq., 197.

violate its constitution or by-laws.³⁰⁵ Excommunication does not always remove an officer of a church corporation.³⁰⁶ The legal rights of a bishop in regard to the temporalities of a church where they are not prescribed by civil law, must rest, if at all, upon the ecclesiastical law, which must be determined by evidence.³⁰⁷

168. Key, Possession, Right.—Having the key of a church, is prima facie evidence of possession, but the right of possession is a matter of proof.³⁰⁸

169. Church, Bishop, Debts, Salary of a Priest.—Where a church is not itself liable because it is not incorporated, the Roman Catholic bishop of the diocese is not personally liable [101] for moneys borrowed by the pastors of such church in the name of the church, which were partly invested in real estate which was put in the bishop's name in the usual manner, although the bishop's permission was necessary before borrowing the money, and notwithstanding that the bishop raised some of the money to pay some of the debts and the mortgage on the real estate of the church on his personal security, and he received part of the borrowed funds from a dying pastor and handed it over to his successor.³⁰⁹ Also, a bishop is not personally liable for the salary of a priest whom he engages. They are fellow servants working for the Church and not in the relation of employer and employee any more than are a general and captain in the same army.³¹⁰

170. Note, Building Committee.—In an action on a note given by the pastor of a church for money borrowed to pay bills for the erection of the church building, in which the plaintiff sought to charge the building committee, and it appeared from

³⁰⁵ State v. Ahnapee, 99 Wis., 322; 74 N. W., 783.

³⁰⁶ Bowldin v. Alexander, 82 U. S., 131; 21 L. Ed., 69; The Catholic Cyclopedia, vol. iii, 755, 756.

³⁰⁷ Leahy v. Williams, 141 Mass., 345; 6 N. E., 78.

³⁰⁸ People v. Runkel, 8 Johnson, N. Y., 464.

³⁰⁹ Leahy v. Williams, 141 Mass., 345.

³¹⁰ Rose v. Vertin, 46 Mich., 457; 9 N. W., 491; Tuigg v. Sheehan, 101 Pa., 363.

[102]

the plaintiff's testimony that the title to the property was in the bishop and the committee did not handle any of the funds, but was a shifting body to whom the pastor only went for advice and consultation, it was held that the plaintiff could not recover.³¹¹

171. *Fraud, Trust.*—Where a “prophet” induced members of his organization, by his fraud and deceit, to convey to him all their property in discharge of a religious duty and then refused to account to them, the court declared the trust closed and divided the estate among the members in proportion to the money, property, and labor contributed by each of them.³¹²

172. *Superioress, Money.*—A person who contributed money for the purpose of repairing a convent, the money being turned over to the superioress and the convent not being incorporated, upon the project being abandoned subsequently a personal judgment could not be obtained against the superioress for the money contributed.³¹³

173. *Loan, Priest.*—If a man lends money to a priest for the purpose of paying a note against the congregation left at the bank for collection, he can recover the money so paid from the congregation.³¹⁴

[103]

174. *Warden, Wages, Sexton.*—A church warden who was hired by the trustees of a church can not collect his wages by an action against the priest of the parish.³¹⁵ A church accepting the services of a sexton is liable to him therefor, whether the by-laws were observed in employing him or not; nor will the fact that any party (as in this case the Ladies of the Altar Society) agreed to contribute to his annual salary, defeat his recovery of the whole from the church employing him.³¹⁶

³¹¹ Freeport v. Egan, 146 Pa., 106; 23 At., 390.

³¹² Scott v. Thompson, 21 Ia., 599.

³¹³ Emonds v. Termehr, 60 Ia., 92; 14 N. W., 197.

³¹⁴ Wojcienchowski v. Johnknowski, 16 Pa. Sup. Ct., 444.

³¹⁵ Chiniqui v. Delaire, 37 Ill., 237.

³¹⁶ St. Patrick's v. Abst., 76 Ill., 252.

175. *Sewing Circle, Money.*—A church may maintain an action against a sewing circle to require it to pay over money collected for the benefit of the church.³¹⁷

[104]

³¹⁷ First v. Prior, 23 Hun., 271.

Chapter XIV. Meetings

176. *Business, Notice, Meeting.*—Where, in the transaction of the local business of a religious society, whether incorporated or not, meetings of the members shall become necessary, in order to make such meetings legal due notice thereof should be given to every member. The notice should specify the exact time and place where the meeting will be held, and no change can be made except at such time and place. Unless some other place is specified, the parish church is the proper place for holding meetings. If the church should be locked and the key can not be found, a meeting should be held at the door or at the nearest practical place to the church where all the members may assemble, and then by a majority vote they may adjourn to any convenient near place accessible to all the members.³¹⁸

177. *Acts, Void, Lawful, Clerk.*—The acts of a majority of the members of a corporation, unless done according to law and in conformity with the charter and by-laws of the corporation, are absolutely null and void.³¹⁹ The only lawful manner by which a congregation can express itself, is by a meeting regularly called and held upon due notice.³²⁰ The notice of a meeting should be authorized by the trustees or other authority of the church, and given to all the members. The clerk of the board of trustees, unless authorized to do so, has no authority to sign the name of the members of the board to a notice, and a meeting called in that way is illegal.³²¹

[105]

³¹⁸ Den. v. Pilling, 24 N. J. L., 653; Rules of Order, Scanlan, 15-18.

³¹⁹ German v. Pressler, 17 La. Ann., 127.

³²⁰ Appeal of McAuley, 77 Pa., 397.

³²¹ Bethany v. Sperry, 10 Conn., 200.

178. *Special Meeting, Notice.*—When a meeting is special, the notice must state for what purpose the meeting is called. If it fails to do so it is void, and unless all the members are present and consent to the holding of the meeting, all business transacted is illegal and void.³²² Notice of a special meeting that states one specific purpose for which it is called, and then states “to transact any other business that may legally come before the meeting,” is not good for any purpose except the one specified.³²³ [106]

179. *Meeting, Consent.*—A valid meeting can not be held by a corporation, unless notice has been given in conformity with the laws and rules and regulations of the corporation or the consent of every person who is entitled to be present at the holding of such meeting. In the latter case the consent should be in writing and signed by all the members.³²⁴ However, a person who attends a meeting and takes part in it without objection, is estopped from raising the question of notice.³²⁵

180. *Notice, Principal Service, Custom.*—When a rule of a church required notice of a meeting to be given at the principal service, a notice given at an earlier service only, was void.³²⁶ But where the ordinances of a church specified that the election of officers should be at least six days before the end of their term, and it became the custom of the church to hold the election on a movable holiday which sometimes was less than six days, the election was held valid.³²⁷

181. *Adjournment.*—Where a meeting was noticed for one day and held on a different day without notice of adjournment, all acts done were void and the officers elected were neither *de jure* nor *de facto* officers.³²⁸ [107]

³²² Weber v. Zimmermann, 22 Md., 156.

³²³ Downs v. Bowdoin, 149 Mass., 135; 21 N. E., 294.

³²⁴ Smith v. Erb., 4 Gill., Md., 437.

³²⁵ Helbig v. Rosenberg, 86 Ia., 159; 53 N. W., 111.

³²⁶ Dahl v. Palache, 68 Cal., 248.

³²⁷ People v. Runkel, 9 Johnson, 147.

³²⁸ First v. Hillary, 51 Cal., 155.

182. *Proof of the Notice.*—The proper proof of the notice would be the return of the officer serving the notice, in some States; and in others an affidavit of the person who served the notice. The proof of the services of a summons would be sufficient unless there is some other law or rule to the contrary.³²⁹

183. *Presiding Officer.*—When the laws of the organization provide who shall preside at a meeting, but the minister contrary to such laws and against objections presided over the majority of the congregation, and the minority was presided over by the proper person, and both elected officers, the officers elected by the minority were the lawful ones.³³⁰ However, where a meeting is presided over without objection by a member instead of the proper officer, the acts of the body are lawful.³³¹

184. *Voters, Rules.*—Unless the laws of the State otherwise provide, every religious organization has the right to determine who shall vote at its meetings and elections. If those provisions are reasonable, they are lawful. Under such provisions it has been repeatedly held that where there are rules requiring annual subscriptions to the church,³³² only those who rented and paid for pews, or those who paid a certain annual tax, or those who went to communion, were entitled to vote.³³³ And where there was no rule, it was held that one who has not contributed to the church³³⁴ and persons who attended church only occasionally and contributed only when they attended, were not qualified voters.³³⁵ In the last case it was stated that a qualified voter is one who has attended regularly during the year and has contributed to the support of the church.

³²⁹ Tuttle v. Cary, 7 Me., 426.

³³⁰ State v. Steward, 6 Houst., Del., 9.

³³¹ Jones v. Cary, 6 Me., 448; Rules of Order, Scanlan, 29-30.

³³² State v. Steward, 6 Houst., Del., 359.

³³³ Juker v. Commonwealth, 20 Pa., 484; McIlvain v. Christ's Church, 8 Phil., 507.

³³⁴ Livingston v. Trinity Church, 45 N. J. L., 230.

³³⁵ People v. Tuthill, 31 N. Y., 550.

185. *Quorum, Majority.*—A quorum of a congregation usually consists of those present at a duly called regular meeting, and a majority of those present is sufficient to carry questions, unless by rule or law otherwise provided.³³⁶ But where there is a definite body in a corporation which has established no other rule, a majority of the members of the corporation constitute a quorum.³³⁷ Where the minutes of the clerk stated that upon due notice the members of the corporation met, a quorum is presumed.³³⁸ [109]

186. *Votes, Challenge, Inspectors, Casting Vote.*—The reception of illegal votes does not invalidate an election unless they change the result.³³⁹ If the presiding officer refuses to allow a qualified voter to vote, the right may be enforced through civil courts.³⁴⁰ When votes have been received without challenge, it is then too late to raise the objection that the persons have no right to vote.³⁴¹ It is the duty of the inspectors to determine the qualifications of an elector at the time that he offers to vote, and before he votes; and if they decide in the exercise of their judgment, without malice or improper motives, the regularity of the election can not be questioned.³⁴² When a rule allows the presiding officer to vote and another rule states that he shall have the casting vote in case of a tie vote, he still had the right to cast the decisive vote.³⁴³ Illegal voting in a religious society probably is not an indictable offense, but it is a disorderly act.³⁴⁴ [110]

187. *Written Notice, Prayer Meeting.*—Where a five days' written notice is required to hold church meetings, an oral notice

³³⁶ *Madison v. Baptist*, 46 N. Y., 131.

³³⁷ *Moore v. St. Thomas' Church*, 4 Abb., N. Y., 51.

³³⁸ *Commonwealth v. Woelper*, 3 Ser. & R., 29.

³³⁹ *Wardens v. Pope*, 74 Mass., 140.

³⁴⁰ *Oakes v. Hill*, 6 Weekly Notes, Cas., 346.

³⁴¹ *Hartt v. Harvey*, 32 Barb., 55.

³⁴² *Weckerly v. Geyer*, 11 Ser. & R., 35.

³⁴³ *People v. Church*, 48 Barb., 603.

³⁴⁴ *Allen v. Gray*, 11 Conn., 95.

given on Sunday evening at the prayer meeting is not sufficient for a meeting on the following Wednesday. But a vote taken on Sunday to hire the minister and fix his salary, is not void.³⁴⁵ Churches and benefit societies, such as insurance fraternities, being charitable organizations, may do business concerning such association on Sunday.³⁴⁶

188. *Expulsion, Damages.*—A man who has been wrongfully expelled from a temperance society for religious reasons may recover damages therefor.³⁴⁷

[111]

³⁴⁵ Arthur v. Norfield, 49 At., 241; 73 Conn., 718.

³⁴⁶ Pepin v. Societies, 23 R. I., 81; 60 L. R. A., 626.

³⁴⁷ Lahiff v. St. Joseph's T. A. B. S., 76 Conn., 648; 65 L. R. A., 92.

Chapter XV. Church Records

189. Evidence, Entries, Minutes.—The record of the proceedings of a religious society is evidence as to its doings, both in its own tribunals and the courts of the State. Such record consists of entries required to be made by the laws or rules of the society, the laws of the State, and the minutes adopted by the society. Therefore, it is of the greatest importance that it be kept with great exactness, omitting nothing that is important.³⁴⁸ Also, the minutes of all the meetings should be correct before being duly adopted. All erasures and interlineations should be certified by the clerk and then signed by him.

190. Uniformity.—Every entry required to be kept by the laws of the State as well as the rules of the Church, should be kept as to births, marriages, and death. Every diocese should have uniform record books in all parishes and every pastor should keep blanks printed in the form of a page of the record book, to issue certificates when required.

[112]

191. Marriage, Death, Baptism, Birth, Church Records.—The church records duly kept in accordance with the discipline of the church, are admissible in evidence to prove marriage, death, and baptism. Where the record is incomplete, as giving the date of baptism only, it is not admissible in proof of date of birth. But if it gives the date of birth, it is *prima facie* proof thereof.³⁴⁹

192. Certified Copies.—Under statutes, certified copies of the record made by the custodian thereof are admissible in evidence in any case where the original would be admissible. Also, one

³⁴⁸ 10 Cyc, 1067.

³⁴⁹ 17 Cyc, 405; 2 Jones on Ev., secs. 522, 523; Conflict of L., Wharton, vol. ii, sec. 761, pp. 1496-8; Collins v. German, Am. M. I. Ass., 112 Mo. App., 209; 86 S. W., 891; Layton v. Kraft, 98 N. Y., 996.

who had compared a copy with the original record may testify to the same. The rule, as given, substantially prevails under statutes in the following States: Alabama, Georgia, Illinois, Indiana, Kansas, Kentucky, Louisiana, Maryland, Minnesota, Missouri, Oklahoma, Pennsylvania, Rhode Island, and Wisconsin; and also, in Ontario, Manitoba, and the Dominion of Canada.

[113] **193. Rule of Admissibility.**—A certified copy of the record of a baptism taken from a church register by the parish priest, when admissible at the place where such record is kept, as in Ireland, is admissible to prove the same fact in the State of Missouri.³⁵⁰

194. Proper Record.—A book kept by a minister, which contained a regular statement in proper form of the admission of members, choice of officers, and transaction of business of the church, which was the only book kept by the parish, is the proper record of the church.³⁵¹

195. Name, Record.—The author would like to emphasize the importance of correct records. Frequently we find no Christian name given in the records of birth, which practically makes the record worthless. When a child is born it is entitled to a name, immediately, which should be given and be correct. At least the first Christian name should be correct; a mistake in a middle name is not material. This is true of deeds and records of all kinds, but practically of births, deaths, and marriages.³⁵²

[114]

³⁵⁰ Collins v. German, 112 Mo. App., 209; Sandberg v. The State, 113 Wis., 578; 89 N. W., 504.

³⁵¹ Sawyer v. Baldwin, 11 Pickering, 492.

³⁵² Finher v. Hanegen, 59 Ark., 151; 24 L. R. A., 543.

Chapter XVI. Church Tribunals

196. *Jurisdiction, Privileges.*—It is usual for every fraternity to have a tribunal of its own for the trial of members who break its laws or violate its discipline. Within their jurisdiction, the laws of the State give such tribunals great privileges and courts show them great respect. The Freemasons, the Knights of Columbus, etc., and most of the churches, have such courts.³⁵³

197. *Trial, Property, Priest.*—In most of the States a court will not interfere with the fair trial of a church tribunal. Neither will the court entertain a controversy concerning the title or right of possession of real or personal property excepting at the instance of some person claiming a right thereto derived from or recognized by the law of the State or of the United States.³⁵⁴ But when the bishop has deprived a subordinate priest of his authority to officiate as such, he may enjoin the priest from making use of the church property.³⁵⁵ [115]

198. *Doubt, Legal Rights.*—The foregoing rule has some doubt cast on it in Delaware and Massachusetts. The investigation of a dispute between members of a church by a committee according to church regulations, consented to by the parties, in which both take part, can have no effect on their legal rights. If the State law provides for cases of the kind, it is superior and must be submitted to. Also, an award or proceeding of a committee is not evidence for or against either party. However, any statement made, or admissions of the parties, if not of a recognized confidential

³⁵³ Mt. Zion v. Whitmore, 83 Ia., 138; 49 N. W., 846; 13 L. R. A., 198.

³⁵⁴ Bonacum v. Murphy, 65 Neb., 831; 98 N. W., 1030; 71 Neb., 463; 102 N. W., 267; 104 ib., 180; Nance v. Busby, 91 Tenn., 303; 18 S. W., 874; 15 L. R. A., 801.

³⁵⁵ Bonacum v. Harrington, 65 Neb., 831; 91 N. W., 886.

nature, may be given in evidence on the trial in a court of the State.³⁵⁶ The judgment of a mutual ecclesiastical council legally convoked will not bind either party rejecting it.³⁵⁷

[116]

199. Bishop, Priest, Redress.—When a bishop removes a priest in the regular way according to the rules and discipline of his church, the priest has no redress.³⁵⁸ Also, when a priest has submitted his case to the church tribunal according to the discipline of his church, he must abide by its decision, excepting where his civil rights or property rights as a citizen are involved, when he may appeal to the laws of the land.³⁵⁹

200. Trial, Counsel.—The question whether a minister on trial in a church tribunal is entitled to be heard by counsel or attorneys depends upon the laws of the church, and it can not be said as a matter of law that he is entitled to counsel.³⁶⁰

201. Removal, Suspension, Trial.—In the United States under the laws and discipline of the Catholic Church a priest may be removed from the charge of a congregation at the pleasure of the bishop, without trial; but he can not be suspended from his priestly functions without specific accusation and trial.³⁶¹

[117]

202. Charges, Fair Trial, Hearsay Evidence.—When a clergyman or officer is to be removed or a member of the congregation is to be excommunicated, it is necessary to fully state the charges against him and give him an opportunity for a fair trial according to the laws and rules of the religious society before rendering final judgment. All the allegations of the complaint should be made upon positive knowledge of the complainant or upon evidence that is admissible to prove the case in court. Rumor or gossip, known as mere hearsay evidence,

³⁵⁶ Tubbs v. Lynch, 4 Harr., Del., 521.

³⁵⁷ Sterns v. Bedford, 21 Pickering, 114.

³⁵⁸ O'Donovan v. Chatard, 97 Ind., 421.

³⁵⁹ Baxter v. McDonald, 155 N. Y., 83; 49 N. E., 667.

³⁶⁰ Gibbs v. Gilead, 38 Conn., 153.

³⁶¹ Stack v. O'Hara, 98 Pa., 213.

is not sufficient to base a charge against the character of any one.³⁶²

203. Trial, Testimony, Slander.—A church judgment, where there has been a full and fair trial or when members submit to the church tribunal, and the judgment has only been rebuke, censure, suspension, or excommunication, is usually upheld by the courts; and when the testimony given on such trial is concerning immoral or scandalous conduct or crime, if those taking part act in good faith and within the scope of the authority of the church, they are protected by law and not liable to an action for damages for libel or slander.³⁶³

204. Remedies, Secular Courts.—In cases involving church doctrine and discipline only, all remedies within the church must be exhausted by a member before the secular courts will interfere, if they will interfere at all.³⁶⁴

[118]

205. Notice, Waiver.—When the laws of the church provide the tribunal and procedure, if the person proceeded against avoids the service of the notice or refuses to submit to the court, the notice of trial required to be served might thereby be considered waived and the tribunal might proceed with the trial in the absence of the accused.³⁶⁵

206. Appeal, Decision, Limitation.—The right to appeal from one court to another of higher jurisdiction is generally recognized.³⁶⁶ If after trial in the lower tribunal of the Church, an appeal is taken, the decision on the appeal is binding upon the parties and also upon the inferior tribunal.³⁶⁷ In the Anglican

³⁶² 29 Cyc, 204, and “Religious Societies”; Am. & Eng. Cyc. of L., “Religious Societies” and “Beneficial Societies”; 2 Benefit Societies & L. Insurance, Bacon, secs. 400a and 450a.

³⁶³ Farnsworth v. Storrs, 59 Mass., 412.

³⁶⁴ Hatfield v. Delong, 24 Ind. App., 343; 51 L. R. A., 751; Ryan v. Cudahy, 157 Ill., 108; 41 N. E., 760; 49 L. R. A., 353.

³⁶⁵ Sampsell v. Esher, 26 Weekly Law Bulletin, Ohio, 156.

³⁶⁶ Day v. Robinson, 12 N. J. L., 206.

³⁶⁷ Diffendorf v. Reformed Church, 20 Johnson, N. Y., 12.

and some other churches, there is no limitation as to time when offenses against the discipline of the church may be inquired into.³⁶⁸

The Catholic Church has a limitation as to prescriptive rights, to-wit: "Three years in case of movable property; ten years in case of a right, or of immovable property, *inter praesentes*; twenty years in the same case, *inter absentes*."³⁶⁹ Also, there are limitations in canonical cases, varying from one to twenty years.³⁷⁰ There is no statute of limitation on lawful debts.

[119]

207. Procedure, Judge, Juror, Witness.—If there are no rules of procedure prescribed by the church tribunal, the proper practice is to follow the State courts; as, for example, where the State law forbids an officer of the court who has an interest in the proceeding to sit as judge or juror, the same would apply to the church tribunal, it being the common law of the land. Also, in States where a person who is interested in a matter is not a competent witness, in the absence of a different rule in the church, the same rule would apply in the church tribunal.³⁷¹

208. Catholic Discipline.—A church member has no right to sue any one in holy orders in the civil court without leave. That is, a layman or priest should obtain leave of the bishop to sue a priest. In some countries it is ground for excommunication to violate the rule. This rule is analogous to the general rule that a sovereign state can not be sued without its consent.³⁷² In this country, where there is no ecclesiastical court recognized in law, leave is rarely asked.³⁷³

[120]

³⁶⁸ Chase v. Cheney, 58 Ill., 509.

³⁶⁹ Catholic Dictionary, Addis & Arnold, "Prescription."

³⁷⁰ Legal Formulary, Baart, 462.

³⁷¹ Juker v. Commonwealth, 20 Pa. St., 484.

³⁷² Beers v. Arkansas, 20 How., U. S., 527; 15 L. Ed., 991.

³⁷³ See "Benefit of the Clergy" and "Forum Ecclesiasticum," in The Catholic Cyclopedia and in the Catholic Dictionary.

Chapter XVII. State Courts

209. *Decision, Ecclesiastical Matter.*—The decision of the highest tribunal of the church on a purely ecclesiastical matter will not be disturbed by civil courts unless it is in open defiance and express violation of the constitution of such body.³⁷⁴

210. *Right of Property, Civil Rights.*—Where there are several church tribunals one above another, when the highest tribunal having jurisdiction of the case has decided a question as to the right of property, a civil court will accept such decision of the church tribunal as conclusive.³⁷⁵ The courts give way to the usages and regulations of the church so far as they are not inconsistent with the constitution and laws of the State.³⁷⁶ As far as civil rights are concerned, the statute of limitations may be pleaded even where those rights are founded upon some law or rule of the denomination.³⁷⁷ [121]

211. *Creed, Factions, Property, Management.*—The supreme court exercises no ecclesiastical jurisdiction, but accepts what the highest ecclesiastical authority in each church promulgates as the faith and practice of that church, and will not determine for itself what that faith or creed is in order to establish the rights of respective factions in the church to the church property. But a majority of a congregation that secedes from the church and

³⁷⁴ Kuns v. Robinson, 154 Ill., 394; 40 N. E., 343; Brundage v. Deardorf, 55 Fed., 839; Watson v. Jones, 80 U. S., 679; 20 L. Ed., 666; Bird v. St. Mark's, 62 Ia., 567; 17 N. W., 747; Perry v. Wheeler, 75 Ky., 541; Powers v. Bundy, 45 Neb., 208; 63 N. W., 476; Connit v. Reformed, 54 N. Y., 551; Harrison v. Hoyle, 24 Ohio St., 254; Kreckler v. Shirey, 163 Pa., 534; 30 At., 540.

³⁷⁵ Watson v. Jones, 80 U. S., 679; 20 L. Ed., 666.

³⁷⁶ Prickett v. Wells, 117 Mo., 502; 24 S. W., 52; Pounder v. Ash, 36 Neb., 564; 54 N. W., 847.

³⁷⁷ Atty-Gen. v. Fed., 69 Mass., 1.

forms a new organization can not claim any of the property.³⁷⁸ The civil courts will not interfere with church management so far as concerns the spiritual discipline of the members, but where civil rights of property are involved, the courts may determine them.³⁷⁹ The civil rights of a religious society or its members are within the jurisdiction of the State courts.³⁸⁰

212. *Trust, Court of Equity.*—A conveyance in trust for the use of a church vests the use in the church and it will be protected by a court of equity.³⁸¹

[122]

213. *Injunction, Closing Church, Paying Money, Disturbances.*—A court of equity will issue an injunction against the trustees of a church from wrongfully closing it or keeping it closed even against a small minority.³⁸² Church property vested in trustees of a religious body is held under trust and a court of equity has jurisdiction to enforce the trust.³⁸³ A court of equity may restrain the trustees of a church from paying money to a duly deposed minister.³⁸⁴ But a court of equity will not interfere to quell religious disturbances when no question as to property or civil rights is involved. The board of trustees of a church can not remove a priest against the will of the congregation.³⁸⁵

214. *Suits, Parties.*—Where a number of persons have contributed to the erection of a church, it is not necessary for all who contribute to join in an action to restrain a sale of the property for mercantile purposes.³⁸⁶ Any member of a church not incorporated may come into a court of equity in behalf of himself and others and enforce the execution of a trust in favor of

³⁷⁸ *Mt. Helen v. Jones*, 79 Miss., 488; 30 So., 714.

³⁷⁹ *Prickett v. Wells*, 117 Mo., 502; 24 S. W., 52.

³⁸⁰ *Ferraria v. Vasconcellos*, 31 Ill., 25.

³⁸¹ *Garten v. Penick*, 68 Ky., 110.

³⁸² *Brunnenmeyer v. Buhre*, 31 Ill., 183.

³⁸³ *Lawson v. Kolbenson*, 61 Ill., 405.

³⁸⁴ *Robertson v. Bullions*, 11 N. Y., 243.

³⁸⁵ *Papalio v. Manusos*, 113 Ill. App., 316.

³⁸⁶ *Avery v. Baker*, 27 Neb., 388; 43 N. W., 174.

the church.³⁸⁷ The same rule would apply to a church where any one in authority is violating the law.³⁸⁸ If several congregations of a diocese are interested in litigation, to hold all the property of the diocese liable for the debt of a parish, each congregation is entitled to be made a party.³⁸⁹ [123]

215. *Complaint.*—A complaint that the plaintiffs hold one doctrinal standard and the defendants another is sufficiently definite without explaining the difference between the two.³⁹⁰

216. *Church Tribunal, Courts.*—Courts are reluctant to interfere in the church doctrine or discipline or inquire into the regularity of the proceedings of the church tribunal. When such tribunal has deposed a pastor or expelled a member, it is final. However, in contracts, property rights, and civil rights of a citizen, the courts take jurisdiction. It is no defense to a pastor's expulsion that there is salary due him.³⁹¹

217. *Unincorporated Congregation, Actions, Interest.*—An unincorporated congregation may be sued on contract in its associate capacity, though no persons are named as trustees or committeeman.³⁹² In all actions by or against a congregation the civil courts will not permit suits to be brought by complainants who have no interest either legal or equitable in the temporalities of the church.³⁹³ A suit against a society of Shakers consisting of indefinite membership with changing additions, withdrawals, and deaths, whose property is held in common without any individual interest, may properly be brought in equity as the remedy at law would be inadequate.³⁹⁴ [124]

³⁸⁷ Trustees v. Trustees, 4 N. J. Eq., 77.

³⁸⁸ Nash v. Sutton, 117 N. C., 231; 23 S. E., 178; Wiswell v. First, 14 Ohio St., 31.

³⁸⁹ Mannix v. Purcell, 46 Ohio St., 102.

³⁹⁰ Baker v. Ducker, 79 Cal., 365; 21 Pac., 764.

³⁹¹ Morris v. Dart, 67 S. C., 338; 45 S. E., 753; 100 Am. St. Rep., 734.

³⁹² Phipps v. Jones, 20 Pa., 260.

³⁹³ Dolan v. City, 4 Gill., 394.

³⁹⁴ Shakers v. Watson, 68 Fed., 730.

218. *Blasphemy, Sabbath, Lord's Prayer, Bible.*—Christianity is a part of the common law of the United States; it is on this ground that blasphemy and violation of the Sabbath are made criminal offenses and that the Lord's Prayer and the Bible are used in the schools.³⁹⁵

[125]

³⁹⁵ 61 Cen. L. J., 49 and 55; 57 C. L. J., 201.

Chapter XVIII. Evidence

219. *Judicial Notice.*—A church takes judicial notice without proof of its own rules, laws, and doctrines. Every other fact should be proved according to the rules of evidence of the church, and in the absence of a church rule the following rules of the courts of this country should prevail:

1. Nothing should be admitted in evidence unless it directly proves or disproves an evidentiary fact forming a link of a chain of facts that will prove a fact in issue.

2. It is sufficient to prove the substance of the issue, unless the exact word or thing forms the issue.

3. The burden of proof is on the one who asserts the fact, whether it is stated affirmatively or negatively, and its proof is necessary to his making a case.

4. The best evidence that the case in its nature affords must be produced.

5. Mere hearsay evidence shall not be allowed, excepting: [126]

(a) Matters of public or general interest.

(b) Declaration against interest.

(c) Dying declarations.

(d) The testimony of witnesses since dead or absent.

(e) Admissions.

(f) Confessions.

220. *Competent Witness.*—Everybody who has the use of reason and understands the import of an oath is a competent witness.

221. *Confessions, Secret Societies.*—At common law, confessions were admissible; but there is no case in the United States since 1813 where the court has sent a priest to jail for contempt for refusing to disclose a confession, and no case

in which a priest disclosed a confession. Immediately after a priest was committed for contempt for refusing to divulge the secrets of the confessional, in 1813, New York enacted the following law: "No minister of the gospel, or priest of any denomination whatsoever, shall be allowed to disclose any confession made to him in his professional character, in the course of discipline enjoined by the rules or practice of such denomination." A similar law has been adopted in the following States and Territories: Alabama, Arizona, California, Colorado, Idaho, Iowa, Kansas, Kentucky, Michigan, Missouri, Nebraska, Nevada, North Dakota, Ohio, New York, Oklahoma, South Dakota, Utah, Washington, Wisconsin, Wyoming, and Hawaii. The secrets of a secret society are not privileged, and a member as a witness must answer all relevant questions in court.³⁹⁶

[127]

222. *Privilege, Answer.*—When a question concerning a matter privileged is put, the priest should say: "I claim my privilege as a clergyman and ask the court not to require me to answer"; "Whatever he said concerning the matter, was said to me in the confessional as a priest"; "I talked with him about the matter only in my professional capacity as a priest and confessor"; "I did not speak to him about the matter except in my confidential capacity as priest;" or a similar statement that sets up the clergyman's privilege without giving facts. A clergyman should not say: "He confessed it to me," or "He told it to me in confession," or give any other answer that implies what was said in confession, as jurors are always watching for a hint of what was said. Neither should the priest say, "I refuse to answer," without stating that he refuses because of his privilege as a clergyman. The trial judge or the attorneys trying the case may put proper questions to determine whether the information was given the witness in the confessional or in his capacity as confessor.³⁹⁷

[128]

³⁹⁶ Owens v. Frank, 7 Wyoming, 457; 53 Pac., 282; 47 Cen. L. J., 221.

³⁹⁷ Evidence, Jones, vol. iii, p. 776.

223. Admissions, False Statements.—Admissions or statements made to a clergyman not in his capacity of confidential adviser or in the course of discipline, are not privileged.³⁹⁸ Neither are false statements made to a committee investigating charges; but all statements made to such a committee or an officer of the church, unless false and made with malice, are privileged.³⁹⁹

224. Anonymous Letter, Clergyman.—Where a priest received an anonymous letter alleged to have been written by a defendant, which he read to her, he was not disqualified from testifying that she was excited and that she stated she had no idea how the fire started, and that the letter was unknown to her, etc.⁴⁰⁰ The mere fact that a communication is made to a clergyman does not make it privileged. It is privileged only when made in confidence of the relation and under such circumstances as to imply that it should forever remain a secret in the breast of the confidential adviser.⁴⁰¹ When a matter is privileged, it is not left [129] to the witness whether or not he shall testify concerning it; but he can not testify without the consent of the other party.⁴⁰²

225. Voire Dire.—Where a priest made a preliminary examination of a woman to ascertain her mental capacity to make a confession, her answers in such preliminary examination were admissible in a contest on a will; but her confession was not admissible.⁴⁰³

226. England, Confession.—The rule is now accorded priests in England, but was not formerly. Where a priest turned a watch over to its owner, the court ordered him, under pain of contempt, to tell where he got the watch.⁴⁰⁴ But in another case it was held

³⁹⁸ Gillooley v. State, 58 Ind., 182.

³⁹⁹ Knight v. Lee, 80 Ind., 201.

⁴⁰⁰ Colbert v. State, 125 Wis., 423; 104 N. W., 61.

⁴⁰¹ Hills v. State, 61 Neb., 589; 85 N. W., 836.

⁴⁰² Bevins v. Kline, 21 Ind., 37.

⁴⁰³ In re Thomas, 54 Cal., 509.

⁴⁰⁴ Rex. v. Hoy, 2 F. & F., 4.

that a priest need not divulge the confession of a defendant who was held for crime.⁴⁰⁵

[130]

227. *United States, Rules.*—In the United States courts, the rule prevails that such confidential communications to a priest shall not be divulged.⁴⁰⁶

228. *Presumptions, Usage.*—The usage of a church or the laws of its organization as a religious society, if they are to be considered in deciding legal controversies, must be proved as facts.⁴⁰⁷ In the absence of proof, it will be presumed that subordinate bodies, as congregations, can not dissolve their connection with the principal organization without permission.⁴⁰⁸

229. *Funeral Expenses.*—Witnesses' opinions as to the reasonable amount for burial or as to the cost of a funeral being reasonable, are not binding on a court or jury. The station of a man, the property that he leaves, the life that he has followed, all should be considered by the court. The whims and notions of societies and others are of minor consideration. Those who make funeral expenses that are not allowed by the court must pay them.⁴⁰⁹

[131]

⁴⁰⁵ *Rex. v. Griffen*, 6 Cox, C. C., 219.

⁴⁰⁶ *Mutual v. Robinson*, 19 U. S. App., 266; *State v. Morgan*, 196 Mo., 177; 95 S. W., 402.

⁴⁰⁷ *Katzer v. City*, 104 Wis., 16; 79 N. W., 745; 80 N. W., 41.

⁴⁰⁸ *Vasconcellos v. Ferrara*, 27 Ill., 237.

⁴⁰⁹ *Foley v. Brocksmitt*, 119 Ia., 457; 93 N. W., 344; 97 Am. St. R., 324; 60 L. R. A., 571; 18 Cyc, 437-9.

Chapter XIX. Contracts

230. *Business, Religious Service.*—A church organization has the legal right to make any contract concerning its own affairs that is not prohibited by its by-laws or its charter, subject to all laws of legal contracts in the business world. When the consideration is a religious service duly performed, there seems to be no objection to it. Therefore, a minister may collect for preaching a sermon, attending the sick, or saying prayers, or performing any other religious service. But an incorporated church has no authority to enter into a contract for an ulterior purpose, such as the employment of a vessel for the purpose of an excursion.⁴¹⁰

231. *Incorporated Body.*—The only way a religious society that is incorporated can make a contract is by a vote of the aggregate body or of the board of trustees, or through an agent authorized by a vote of one body or the other.⁴¹¹

[132]

232. *Mortgage, Deficiency Judgment.*—Where a mortgage had been foreclosed against church property before the congregation was incorporated, a deficiency judgment can not be rendered against such church corporation.⁴¹² But where a congregation was incorporated after a debt had been incurred and took charge of the property, it assumed the debt.⁴¹³

233. *Building Contracts.*—The taking part in a meeting by voting and appointing committees to make contracts will bind those taking part in all contracts made in accordance with the directions of such meeting. In some States the individuals are

⁴¹⁰ Harriman v. First, 63 Ga., 186.

⁴¹¹ Methodist v. Sherman, 36 Wis., 404.

⁴¹² St. Patrick's v. Daly, 116 Ill., 76; 4 N. E., 241.

⁴¹³ Eager v. Inhabitants, 10 Mass., 430.

held only to the amount that each subscribes, but in other States each individual is liable for the entire debt.⁴¹⁴

234. *Individual Promise, Subscriptions, Signature.*—An individual promise to give a donation to charity, can not be enforced.⁴¹⁵ But subscriptions to build a church or other charitable institution or to pay the salary of a clergyman when signed by more than one person, have been held binding in some cases on the disputed rule of a-promise-for-a-promise consideration.⁴¹⁶ In the foregoing cases the donor might revoke his subscription or in case of his death his estate would not be liable.⁴¹⁷ However, when expenses have been made or steps taken in the carrying out of the object of the subscriptions, the general rule is that the subscriptions become binding contracts.⁴¹⁸ If the object of the subscriptions be abandoned or changed without the consent of the subscriber, he is thereby released. A promissory note given for the subscription, unless negotiated for value in due course of trade, does not change the foregoing rules.⁴¹⁹ Where many persons subscribed to build a church and some of them failed to pay, one who paid brought an action on behalf of himself and others and collected the unpaid subscriptions.⁴²⁰ The defendant Nalty signed “Nalty Family, \$1,000,” but he was held personally liable.⁴²¹

235. *Special Purpose, Suit.*—When money is subscribed for

⁴¹⁴ Barnes v. Perrine, 9 Barb., N. Y., 202; Sheehy v. Blake, 77 Wis., 394; 46 N. W., 537; 69 L. R. A., 255; Cutler v. Thomas, 25 Vt., 13; Allen v. M. E. Church, 127 Ia., 96; 102 N. W., 808; 69 L. R. A., 255 Note.

⁴¹⁵ 9 Cyc, 331.

⁴¹⁶ 45 Cent. Dig., 7.

⁴¹⁷ 45 Cent. Dig., 38.

⁴¹⁸ 45 Cent. Dig., 14.

⁴¹⁹ 45 Cent. Dig., 1-54; Am. & Eng. Ency. of Law, “Subscriptions.”

⁴²⁰ Legal Maxims, Broom, 745; Hodges v. Nalty, 104 Wis., 464; 80 N. W., 726.

⁴²¹ Hodges v. Nalty, 113 Wis., 557; 89 N. W., 535; Hodges v. O'Brien, 113 Wis., 97; 88 N. W., 901.

a special purpose, as for rebuilding a church, it belongs to the church organization; and in a suit to recover the money the action should be brought in the name of the corporation, if incorporated, and if not incorporated it should be brought in the name of the interested party.⁴²² [134]

236. *Promise, Consideration.*—A promise made by the owner of land to a trustee for the benefit of a religious society, that he would convey the land to such society if it would build a church thereon, is a good and lawful consideration; and after work was begun on the church, the contract was enforceable in a court of equity.⁴²³

[135]

⁴²² Barnes v. Perine, 9 Bar., N. Y., 202.

⁴²³ Macon v. Shepard, 2 Humphrey, Tenn., 335.

Chapter XX. Pews

237. *Sold, Rented.*—Prior to the Reformation pews were not sold nor rented and every member had the right to sit wherever he pleased in the body of the church. After the Reformation, the ordinary or bishop was granted the right of “faculty” to rent or sell pews.⁴²⁴

238. *Incorporeal Hereditament.*—The English title in a pew is in the nature of a right of way through another's land; it is an incorporeal hereditament. In the absence of express law, the title to pews in this country is said to be in the nature of real estate, and in fact not very different from the English title.⁴²⁵ In some States the title is made personal property by statute.⁴²⁶ And in others the courts have inquired into the law of the church and adjudged the title accordingly.⁴²⁷ The general rule is that the owner of a pew simply has an easement.⁴²⁸

239. *Catholic Church, Pew Rights.*—In the Catholic Church, by the canon law, the ownership in or control over a pew is forbidden to laymen. Notwithstanding that, if the party holding the title violates the rule of the church by giving a deed to the pew-holder, the courts would probably sustain his title.⁴²⁹ However, as the clergy can neither rent nor sell pews without

[136]

⁴²⁴ O'Hear v. De Goesbriand, 33 Vt., 593; 80 Am. Dec., 662.

⁴²⁵ Bates v. Sperrell, 10 Mass., 323; Hodges v. Green, 28 Vt., 358; Pres. v. Andrus, 21 N. J. L., 225.

⁴²⁶ Church v. Wells, 24 Pa., 249.

⁴²⁷ O'Hear v. De Goesbriand, 33 Vt., 593; 80 Am. Dec., 662.

⁴²⁸ Proprietors v. Roswell, 66 Me., 400; Sohier v. Trinity, 109 Mass., 1; Aylward v. O'Brien, 160 Mass., 118; 35 N. E., 313; 22 L. R. A., 206.

⁴²⁹ Aylward v. O'Brien, 160 Mass., 118; 35 N. E., 313; 22 L. R. A., 206; O'Hear v. De Goesbriand, 33 Vt., 593; 80 Am. Dec., 662.

becoming subject to the law of the land and the jurisdiction of our courts, it is important to know what the law of the State is.

240. *Land, Use, Rent Pews.*—Where land was conveyed in trust to the bishop of a diocese and his successors for the erection of a church for the use of a congregation, the right to rent pews vested under the deed and laws of the Catholic Church in the parish priest and not in the trustees afterward elected, as the parish priest was the agent of the bishop.⁴³⁰

241. *Trustees, Sale in Perpetuity.*—Without authority of law the trustees of a church can not make an absolute sale in perpetuity of a pew without any reservation of rent.⁴³¹ The sale of a pew in a church will be determined in a case according to the particular facts.⁴³² [137]

242. *Pew, Right to Occupy, Conditions.*—A grant of a church pew in perpetuity does not give the owner an absolute right of property as a grant of land in fee; but gives only a right to sit therein, although he may maintain an action in court for protection of his rights.⁴³³ In Vermont a pewholder has only the right to occupy his seat during religious services and holds it subject to the superior right of the society owning the pew.⁴³⁴ A condition in the deed to a pew that a holder about to leave the congregation shall offer it to the society for a certain price, is not invalid.⁴³⁵ Where a pewholder held his pew by a certain agreement and after the church had been remodeled he bought a different pew, the conditions attached to the first pew did not apply to the last.⁴³⁶ Pews owned by the occupant pass to the heirs as real estate instead of going to the executors as personal [138]

⁴³⁰ Smith v. Bonhoff, 2 Mich., 115.

⁴³¹ Vorhees v. Presbyterian, 8 Barb., 135.

⁴³² Price v. Lyon, 14 Conn., 280.

⁴³³ Baptist v. Witherell, 3 Paige, N. Y., 296; 24 Am. Dec., 223.

⁴³⁴ Perrin v. Granger, 33 Vt., 101.

⁴³⁵ French v. Old, 106 Mass., 479.

⁴³⁶ Curry v. First, 2 Pittsburg, 105.

property in States where the title is in the nature of the title to real estate.⁴³⁷

243. Tax, Assessment.—A tax assessed upon the pew of a religious corporation in part for purposes not specifically named in a deed of the pew, which alone gives the power to make such an assessment and which strictly defines and limits such power, is invalid *in toto*.⁴³⁸ The right to make an assessment on pews must be founded upon law, else it can not be enforced.⁴³⁹ When a congregation sells pews at auction rent free for the purpose of building a church, it has no power thereafter to assess the pews for the salary of the minister.⁴⁴⁰

244. Pewholders' Rights.—A pewholder has the exclusive right to occupy his pew when the house is used for the purpose for which it was erected; but he can not convert his pew to other purposes not contemplated.⁴⁴¹ If he has paid his pew-rent according to agreement, he is entitled to use his pew on all occasions when the house is occupied, even when it is open for purposes different from those mentioned in the conveyance thereof; and he has the right to exclude all others from his pew by fastening the door or otherwise, and any one who enters his pew knowing the facts, is a trespasser and liable to an action for damages.⁴⁴² The owner of a pew has no right to put an offensive covering thereon nor use his pew in any way to the annoyance of the congregation or not in keeping with the place and conditions. By placing anything offensive about his pew, he may be liable for maintaining a nuisance, and such offensive thing may be removed; but, as far as possible, it must be removed without damaging the pewholder's property.⁴⁴³

⁴³⁷ Succession of Gambla, 23 La. Ann., 9.

⁴³⁸ First v. Braydon, 91 Mass., 248.

⁴³⁹ Downs v. Bowdoin, 149 Mass., 135; 21 N. E., 294.

⁴⁴⁰ Trustees v. Quackenbush, 10 Johnson, 217.

⁴⁴¹ Kellogg v. Dickenson, 18 Vt., 266.

⁴⁴² Jackson v. Rounsiville, 5 Metcalf, Mass., 127.

⁴⁴³ Murray v. Cargill, 32 Me., 517; Gay v. Baker, 17 Mass., 435; Shaw v.

245. *Rebuilding, Remodeling.*—An injunction was granted on the bill of pewholders, restraining the authorities of the church from pulling it down, as they were going to use the materials in the erection of a new church on a different site. On the answer, the injunction was dissolved on the ground that if the complainants had rights which would be violated, there was a remedy at law and that the nature and extent of the injury were not such as called for the interposition of a court of equity by injunction.⁴⁴⁴ [140]

Where a parish abandons an old church and builds a new one it does not become liable to any pewholder for damages by reason thereof unless it has acted wantonly or intentionally to injure the pewholder.⁴⁴⁵ But when it becomes necessary for the purpose of repairing or remodeling a church, to destroy old pews, a pew built by a member under contract with the church can not be removed or destroyed without compensation.⁴⁴⁶ Pew rights are subject to the right of the parish to pull down and rebuild a church either as a matter of necessity or expediency, but in the latter case the owner of a pew is entitled to payment.⁴⁴⁷ A pewholder has only the right to occupy his pew during public worship, and when the church has become so out of repair that it can not be used for public worship, the owner of a pew can recover only nominal damages for injuries to his pew.⁴⁴⁸

246. *Selling Pew on Execution.*—In an action to recover the value of a pew sold at auction, the merits of the case will be tried according to the law of the land.⁴⁴⁹ It is doubtful whether a pew [141]

in a church can be sold for private debts of the pewholder.⁴⁵⁰ It

Beveridge, 3 Hill, N. Y., 26; Perrin v. Granger, 33 Vt., 101.

⁴⁴⁴ Vanhorn v. Tailmadge, 8 N. J. Eq., 108.

⁴⁴⁵ Fassett v. Boylston, 19 Pickering, Mass., 361.

⁴⁴⁶ Kimball v. Rowley, 24 Pickering, Mass., 347.

⁴⁴⁷ Aylward v. O'Brien, 160 Mass., 118; 35 N. E., 313; 22 L. R. A., 206; Van Houten v. Trustees, 17 N. J. Eq., 126.

⁴⁴⁸ Howard v. Stevens, 47 Vt., 262.

⁴⁴⁹ Stoddard v. Vestry, 2 Gill. & J., Md., 227.

⁴⁵⁰ City v. McIntyre, 8 Rob., La., 467.

depends somewhat upon the title and State law of exemptions.⁴⁵¹ To render an attachment of a pew valid, it is not necessary for the officer to come in sight of the pew or even to enter the church.⁴⁵²

247. *Members, Pew.*—Members of the congregation may be required to pay for a pew or sitting in the church, and where a priest ejected a member from the church because he would not rent a pew, he was sustained by the court.⁴⁵³

248. *Free Church, Seats, Lease.*—The trustees of a free church may assign seats and forcibly remove one from a seat without authority.⁴⁵⁴ Where a pew is real estate, a pewholder may acquire the right to it by prescription in the usual way.⁴⁵⁵ Where pews are not rented and the members support the church by voluntary subscriptions, they have equal right to the occupancy of the pews. But where the church builds the pews and rents them, a man paying rent for a pew holds it under lease in the nature of a lease to real estate. However, he does not obtain all the rights of a lessee of land, and in many cases a rule of the church governs the holding of pews, which will be observed by the State courts.⁴⁵⁶

249. *Executors, Pew-Rent.*—The executors of a pew owner are not bound to pay pew-rent accrued after the owner's death.

250. *Voting, Pew-Rent, Arrears.*—Where a church is incorporated and by its charter or the laws of the State it has authority to make reasonable by-laws, a by-law which prohibits any person from voting whose pew-rent is in arrears for more than two years, is valid.⁴⁵⁷

[142]

[143]

⁴⁵¹ *Sargent v. Pierce*, 43 Mass., 80.

⁴⁵² *Perrin v. Leverett*, 13 Mass., 128.

⁴⁵³ *Crowley v. Miller*, 19 N. Y. Weekly Dig., 262.

⁴⁵⁴ *Sheldon v. Vail*, 28 Hun., 354.

⁴⁵⁵ *Price v. Lyons*, 14 Conn., 280.

⁴⁵⁶ *Perrin v. Granger*, 33 Vt., 101.

⁴⁵⁷ *Commonwealth v. Cain*, 5 Srg. & R., Pa., 510.

Chapter XXI. Property

251. *Unincorporated, Trustee.*—The question whether an unincorporated religious society may take a gift or devise, is determined by the law of domicile.⁴⁵⁸ Generally an unincorporated religious association can not hold property in its assumed name, but it must be held by conveyance in trust to a trustee named.⁴⁵⁹

252. *Charter, By-Laws.*—When the charter or by-laws of a church corporation provide that they may be altered, such changes may, after the execution and delivery of a deed, immediately adhere to the title.⁴⁶⁰

253. *Suits, Corporation, Members.*—Cases may occur in which the corporation in its corporate capacity, or the society in its collective capacity, may be a plaintiff or a defendant in a suit between it and one or more members of the religious society in their individual capacity or in their collective capacity, in a quasi-conspiracy or concerning other torturous acts, or a collective contract.⁴⁶¹ [144]

254. *Deed, Court, Title.*—A deed made in pursuance of an order of a court having jurisdiction passes good title.⁴⁶²

255. *Subscription, Lots.*—Any one may convey title to a church as his part of the subscription by merely marking it on a plat made by him, as lots donated to such church.⁴⁶³

⁴⁵⁸ In re Bullock, 6 Dem. Sur., 335; Heiss v. Murphy, 40 Wis., 276; Ruth v. Oberbrunner, 40 Wis., 238.

⁴⁵⁹ Ruth v. Oberbrunner, 40 Wis., 238; Goesele v. Bimeler, 55 U. S., 589; 14 L. Ed., 554; Van Houten v. Trustees, 17 N. J. Eq., 126.

⁴⁶⁰ Winnepesaukee v. Gordon, 63 N. H., 505; 3 At., 426.

⁴⁶¹ Bethel v. Carmack, 2 Md., Ch., 143; Tartar v. Gibbs, 24 Md., 323.

⁴⁶² Lynch v. Pfeiffer, 110 N. Y., 33; 17 N. E., 402.

⁴⁶³ Enos v. Chestnut, 88 Ill., 590.

256. *Misnomer, Identity.*—The misnomer of a religious society or corporation will not invalidate a mortgage where the identity of the society can be clearly shown.⁴⁶⁴

257. *Adverse Possession, Color of Title.*—A religious corporation may obtain title to land by adverse possession. The length of such possession is determined by the laws of the State, the usual period being twenty years.⁴⁶⁵ Unless the laws of the State require it, color of title at the time of asserting adverse possession need not be shown.⁴⁶⁶

[145]

258. *Sale, Restrictions.*—In some States when not restricted by the laws of the organization the parish corporation may sell the premises in order to pay the church debts. However, it is not a common law right.⁴⁶⁷

259. *Deed.*—A deed to “The Evangelical Order of Christians” was sufficiently definite for a valid conveyance.⁴⁶⁸

260. *Error.*—A clerical error in the name of the grantee will not make a deed void. However, when such error has been discovered, it should be corrected.⁴⁶⁹

261. *Mortgage, Bishop, Debts.*—The archbishop of a church to which property is bequeathed, can not mortgage it without authority from the church or under the law.⁴⁷⁰ Also, the bishop of a diocese to whom land had been conveyed in trust for a particular congregation, could not execute a valid mortgage thereon to secure his own indebtedness.⁴⁷¹ But a religious society in the absence of prohibitory legislation, has power to

⁴⁶⁴ Walwrath v. Camel, 28 Mich., 111.

⁴⁶⁵ Harpending v. Reformed, 41 U. S., 455; 10 L. Ed., 1029.

⁴⁶⁶ Inhabitants v. Catholics, 40 Mass., 139; People v. Trinity, 22 N. Y., 44.

⁴⁶⁷ Lynch v. Pfeiffer, 110 N. Y., 33; 17 N. E., 402; Eggleston v. Doolittle, 33 Conn., 396.

⁴⁶⁸ Tomlin v. Blunt, 31 Ill. App., 234.

⁴⁶⁹ Centenary v. Parker, 43 N. J. Eq., 307; 12 At., 142.

⁴⁷⁰ Levasseur v. Martin, 11 La. Ann., 684.

⁴⁷¹ O'Donnell v. Holden, 21 Weekly Law Bulletin, 254.

mortgage its property to secure its debts.⁴⁷²

[146]

262. *Deed, Trust, Fee.*—A deed of land to a Catholic bishop and his heirs and assigns forever in trust for a Catholic parish for the purpose of a free burial ground, gave the bishop an estate in fee.⁴⁷³

263. *Debts, Creditors.*—A committee of a religious society authorized to sell lands to raise money to pay its general debts, is not authorized to execute a mortgage for the purpose of securing various creditors holding claims; and the defect in such mortgage is not cured by a vote at a subsequent meeting to which the committee made a report of its action.⁴⁷⁴

264. *Mortgage or Sale, Notice, Consent.*—Whenever there is to be a mortgage or sale of the church property, if it is to be done by the corporation, it must be done strictly in accordance with the charter and laws of the corporation, and if those do not provide therefor, every member should receive a reasonable notice to attend a meeting of the congregation and the question should be submitted to such meeting and a vote taken thereon. If all the proceedings are regular and the proper officers (president and secretary) of the corporation be authorized to make a conveyance, it is good in law.⁴⁷⁵ However, if the irregular acts of officers or members of a congregation are subsequently ratified in a lawful manner, they become binding.⁴⁷⁶ When consent of the court is required, it must be obtained.⁴⁷⁷

[147]

265. *Title, Taxes, Judicial Notice.*—If the title is in the bishop in fee in accordance with church law it is not “owned by any religious association” and is liable for taxes. The laws of the Catholic Church are not the subject of judicial notice, but must

⁴⁷² Walwrath v. Camel, 28 Mich., 111.

⁴⁷³ Fitzpatrick v. Fitzgerald, 79 Mass., 400.

⁴⁷⁴ Hubbard v. German, 34 Ia., 31.

⁴⁷⁵ In re First, 106 N. Y., 251; 12 N. E., 626; Wiswell v. First, 14 Ohio St., 31.

⁴⁷⁶ Scott v. First, 50 Mich., 528; 15 N. W., 891.

⁴⁷⁷ In re First, 106 N. Y., 251; 12 N. E., 626.

be alleged and proved as any other fact.⁴⁷⁸

266. Title, Diocese, Rule.—Where the title to the property of the diocese was in the bishop for the use of the church and subsequently the diocese was incorporated, the bishop was not divested of title and it was still necessary to have the property conveyed by deed.⁴⁷⁹ In some other States, however, the contrary rule prevails.⁴⁸⁰

267. Priest, Deed, Funds.—Where it was claimed that a priest purchased lands and took the deed in his own name and paid therefor with funds belonging to the congregation, the conveyance will not be decreed by the court only upon the clearest and most satisfactory evidence.⁴⁸¹

268. Monks, Missions, Title.—The fact that the monks or priests were at the head of the missions in California when it was acquired by the United States, does not prove that the Catholic Church had universal ownership of the property.⁴⁸² The acts of Congress giving the city of San Antonio authority to sell public lands, was intended, no doubt, to dispose of mission property, but it was held not to affect the Catholic Church, the title to which had been confirmed by another act of Congress.⁴⁸³

269. Texan Revolution, Land.—At the time of the Texan Revolution, a Catholic church held no real estate of perfect title, but enjoyed only the use of the land that it possessed and continued so to occupy after the admission of Texas into the Union.⁴⁸⁴

270. Priest, Agent, Deed.—The priest in charge of a congregation is the agent of the archbishop, and where the

⁴⁷⁸ *Katzer v. City of Milwaukee*, 104 Wis., 16; 79 N. W., 745; 80 N. W., 41.

⁴⁷⁹ *Beckwith v. St. Phillip's Parish*, 69 Ga., 564.

⁴⁸⁰ *Miller v. Chittenden*, 2 Ia., 315; 4 Ia., 252; *Schenectady v. Veeder*, 4 Wendell, N. Y., 494.

⁴⁸¹ *St. Patrick's v. Daly*, 116 Ill., 76.

⁴⁸² *Nobilli v. Redman*, 6 Cal., 325.

⁴⁸³ *San Antonio v. Odin*, 15 Tex., 539.

⁴⁸⁴ *Blair v. Odin*, 3 Tex., 288.

title to the real estate is conveyed by absolute deed to the bishop, the congregation, against the protest of the priest and without obtaining leave from the bishop, has no right to tear down a church for the purpose of rebuilding or repairing it.⁴⁸⁵ And a priest in charge of mission property may maintain in his name an action to recover its possession.⁴⁸⁶ [149]

271. *Devise, Uncertainty.*—A devise of property “to the Roman Catholic Orphans” of a certain diocese, making the bishop of the diocese executor of the will and giving him power to sell the property and use the proceeds for the benefit of the Roman Catholic orphans, is void for uncertainty.⁴⁸⁷

272. *Donor, Ambiguous Provision.*—The religious convictions of the donor may be shown for the purpose of construing an ambiguous provision of a deed or will.⁴⁸⁸

273. *Trust, Evidence.*—Without any trust being declared in writing, parol evidence can not be allowed to prove that the Catholic Church and parsonage is held in trust for the congregation by the bishop of the diocese, notwithstanding that the moneys for purchasing the lands and putting up such buildings were collected by subscriptions and contributions made to the priest in charge under the law, usage, and polity of the Roman Catholic Church.⁴⁸⁹ At common law land may be granted to pious uses before there is a grantee to take it. In the meantime, the title is in abeyance.⁴⁹⁰ Where the title to parsonage lands is in the minister as a sole corporation, on his death the title remains in abeyance until a successor is appointed.⁴⁹¹ [150]

274. *Money, Control.*—Money raised by a Catholic congregation for the purpose of building a church does not

⁴⁸⁵ Heiss v. Vosburg, 59 Wis., 532; 18 N. W., 463.

⁴⁸⁶ Santillan v. Moses, 1 Cal., 92.

⁴⁸⁷ Heiss v. Murphy, 40 Wis., 276.

⁴⁸⁸ Robertson v. Bullions, 11 N. Y., 243.

⁴⁸⁹ Hennessey v. Walsh, 55 N. H., 515.

⁴⁹⁰ Pawlet v. Clarke, 13 U. S., 292; 3 L. Ed., 735.

⁴⁹¹ Cheever v. Pierson, 33 Mass., 266.

come under the absolute control of the bishop or priest, although put into the hands of the latter for safe keeping. It is subject to the control of the congregation, although the members of the congregation refused to obey the command of the bishop of the diocese to consolidate with another church to which the priest was removed.⁴⁹²

275. Church, Building, Removing.—Where subscriptions were secured to build a church at a particular place as a memorial to a certain person, a congregation may be enjoined from tearing down the building and removing it to another place.⁴⁹³ But a court of equity will not prevent the removal of a church where a majority of the congregation favors it, although a legal meeting had not been held to determine the matter.⁴⁹⁴

[151]

276. Church, Use, Division.—A church guild that erected a building adjoining a church for parish purposes, with the assent of the congregation, can not deny the authority of the church and use the building for other purposes.⁴⁹⁵ But if members are improperly excluded from the use of the church property they must appeal to the courts for redress and can not resort to acts of trespass to gain entrance into a church.⁴⁹⁶ A court of equity will compel persons having charge of the temporalities of a church, whether incorporated or not, to faithfully perform their trust and to prevent the diversion of the property from its original purposes. The court will not interfere in strictly religious matters.⁴⁹⁷

277. Spanish Territory.—When Alabama was a part of

⁴⁹² *Amish v. Gelhaus*, 71 Ia., 170; 32 N. W., 318.

⁴⁹³ *Cushman v. Church*, 162 Pa., 280; 29 At., 472.

⁴⁹⁴ *Kulinsky v. Dambrowski*, 29 Wis., 109.

⁴⁹⁵ *Reed v. Church*, 6 Pa. Co. Ct., 76.

⁴⁹⁶ *Fullbright v. Higgenbotham*, 133 Mo., 668; 34 S. W., 875; *People v. Runkel*, 9 Johnson, 147; *Central v. Patterson*, 30 N. Y. Supp., 248; *Unangst v. Shortz*, 5 Horton, Pa., 506.

⁴⁹⁷ *Bowden v. MacLeod*, 1 Edw., N. Y., 588; *Gable v. Miller*, 10 Paige, N. Y., 627; *Wilson v. Johns*, 2 Rich., S. C., Eq., 192; *Ferraria v. Vasconcellos*, 31 Ill., 25.

Spanish territory, a deed of land “to His Catholic Majesty for the purpose of building thereon a parochial church and dwelling-house for the officiating priest,” the money being paid out of the royal treasury, did not constitute the King of Spain a trustee for the church or transfer to the church in equity a title to the lots.⁴⁹⁸ [152]

278. *Trust, Purposes, Doctrines.*—When a conveyance of a lot is made to certain persons of a religious society and their successors in trust for religious purposes, all the members become beneficiaries in equal degree notwithstanding some of them may have contributed larger sums than others.⁴⁹⁹ Land conveyed to a church for valuable consideration belongs to the church, whatever change may take place in its religious doctrines; and if a minority secedes on the ground that they are the ones who retain the original tenets of the church, they can not take with them either the whole or pro rata share of the church property.⁵⁰⁰

279. *Control, Revenues.*—The trustees of a corporation of a church or of a religious society have entire control over the revenues of such body.⁵⁰¹ [153]

280. *Leave to Purchase, Title, Canons of the Church.*—A congregation wanted to buy a church and priest's house, but the archbishop refused leave to purchase, but granted permission to keep the premises for religious purposes for a time. The members formed a society and bought and took title in the name of the “Lithuanian Benefit Society of St. Anthony.” Then the archbishop wrote them a letter requiring the deed of the premises to be put in his name, which the congregation refused to do. A part of the congregation brought a suit in equity to enforce the transfer from the society to the archbishop. The court held that if the congregation was under the church and acknowledged its authority, the title must be settled by the canons of the church;

⁴⁹⁸ *Antones v. Eslava's heirs*, 9 Port., 527.

⁴⁹⁹ *Ferraria v. Vasconcellos*, 31 Ill., 25; *Brunnenmeyer v. Buhre*, 32 Ill., 183.

⁵⁰⁰ *Organ v. Seaford*, 1 Dev., N. C. Eq., 453; *Post* 290, 319.

⁵⁰¹ *Gram v. Prussia*, 36 N. Y., 161; *Reformed v. Draper*, 97 Mass., 349.

otherwise, the majority of the congregation, in a duly called meeting, should determine where the title should be vested.⁵⁰²

281. Cemetery, Authority.—When a congregation that had title to a cemetery for many years entrusted the management and sale of the lots to the priest, he had thereby authority to create servitudes, such as alleys to lots, which become binding on the congregation and all third persons.⁵⁰³

[154]

282. Real Estate, Purpose.—A church has no power to acquire and hold real estate for any purpose other than that of promoting the object of its creation, and any contract entered into for a purchase of real estate as a matter of speculation is *ultra vires* and void.⁵⁰⁴

283. Limitation, Lands.—A statute of the State prohibiting a religious society from holding more than twenty acres, applies to a single parish or congregation and not to the entire denomination when it consists of more than one congregation.⁵⁰⁵

284. Conditions, Bequest, Deed, Time.—Where property has been devised for a particular purpose or on certain conditions attached thereto, the law may be invoked to protect the fund according to the bequest.⁵⁰⁶ And where a deed contained a clause that the lots should never be sold nor used in any other way except for the benefit of a specified Protestant Church, although the deed contained no clause of forfeiture, when the congregation sold the property the grantor was entitled to have the deed set aside and the title re-vested in himself.⁵⁰⁷ And a grant made upon condition that a church be erected thereon, prevents the grantee from conveying it for other purposes without

[155]

⁵⁰² Dochkus v. Lithuanian, 206 Pa., 25; 55 At., 779.

⁵⁰³ Burke v. Wall, 29 La. Ann., 38.

⁵⁰⁴ Thompson v. West, 59 Neb., 677; 82 N. W., 13; 49 L. R. A., 337.

⁵⁰⁵ Morgan v. Leslie, Wright, O., 144.

⁵⁰⁶ Consistory v. Brandow, 52 Barb., N. Y., 228.

⁵⁰⁷ Grisson v. Hill, 17 Ark., 483.

the consent of the grantor or his heirs.⁵⁰⁸ But where a devise was made on condition that a church be built on the property within three years, the provision being a condition subsequent, a court has the right to extend the time.⁵⁰⁹

285. Will, Forfeiture.—The provision in a will or deed that land shall be used for purposes of a certain church, may create a trust for the benefit of the church only and not a condition the breach of which would work a forfeiture.⁵¹⁰ When a condition is put in a deed that it shall be forever used as a burial ground for the interment of bodies, it is doubtful whether the grantor and grantee together may change the uses of the property. Therefore, it is important in taking deeds to cemeteries to have no condition whatever, unless such conditions are desired.⁵¹¹

286. Condition, Quit-Claim.—After conveying land upon a specified condition, the grantor then gave a quit-claim deed, and the court held that that relieved the grant from the condition.⁵¹² [156]

287. Bishop, Trust, Successors.—A deed of land to the bishop of a church for a Protestant Episcopal church in fee simple, created a trust and on the death of such bishop the title passed to his successors.⁵¹³ Where a grantee in a deed absolute on its face, is in fact archbishop of the Roman Catholic Church for his diocese, its canons and decrees regulating the mode of acquiring and holding church property are competent evidence to show that the property is so held in trust for purposes for public worship and other charitable uses. And property so held by a Catholic bishop in trust for the diocese, or in trust for a congregation, school, cemetery, or asylum, for the separate use of each, is not

⁵⁰⁸ Scott v. Stipe, 12 Ind., 74; Mills v. Davison, 54 N. J. Eq., 659; 35 At., 1072; 35 L. R. A., 113.

⁵⁰⁹ Appeal of Tappen, 52 Conn., 412.

⁵¹⁰ Neely v. Hoskins, 84 Me., 386; 24 At., 882.

⁵¹¹ Second v. Dugan, 65 Md., 460; 5 At., 415.

⁵¹² Craig v. Inhabitants, 58 Me., 479.

⁵¹³ Beckwith v. St. Phillip's Church, 68 Ga., 564.

chargeable with any part of the expenses of another one or for improving the church property generally in the diocese.⁵¹⁴

[157]

288. Trustees, Vacancy.—When land is conveyed to certain persons as trustees of a church and their successors lawfully appointed, a court of equity will not step in to fill a vacancy but will leave that to be filled by the church in accordance with its discipline.⁵¹⁵ But an attempt to sell real estate of a religious society against the provisions of its charter, will be prevented by a court of equity.⁵¹⁶

289. Church, Majority, Change.—When property is conveyed to a church having a well-known doctrine, faith, and practice, a majority of the members has not the authority or power by reason of a change of religious views to carry the property thus dedicated to a new and different doctrine.⁵¹⁷

[158]

290. Title, Harmony, Division.—The title to church property in a divided congregation is in that part of the congregation which acts in harmony with the law of the denomination; and the ecclesiastical laws and principles which were accepted among them before the dispute began, are the standard for determining which party is right.⁵¹⁸ In other cases the division of church property, where there is a division of the congregation, depends upon its particular facts.⁵¹⁹ Where \$400 was bequeathed to a Lutheran congregation in S——, there being at the time of the making of the will but one Lutheran congregation in the place, but subsequently a majority of the trustees and members with the pastor left the church and built a new one, the old church

⁵¹⁴ Mannix v. Purcell, 46 Ohio St., 102; 19 N. E., 572; 2 L. R. A., 753.

⁵¹⁵ Draper v. Minor, 36 Mo., 290.

⁵¹⁶ Burton's Appeal, 57 Pa. St., 213.

⁵¹⁷ Smith v. Pedigo, 145 Ind., 361; 33 N. E., 777; 44 N. E., 363; 32 L. R. A., 838.

⁵¹⁸ Free Ch. of Scotland v. Overton, Appeal Cases, House of Lords, 1904; McGinnis v. Watson, 41 Pa. St., 9; Ante, 278.

⁵¹⁹ First v. Rauss, 21 Conn., 160; Watson v. Jones, 13 Wallace, 679; 20 L. Ed., 666.

continued vested with the title to the property and all its funds.⁵²⁰

291. *Perversion, Misuse, Suit.*—Unless there is substantial departure from the purpose of the trust which amounts to a perversion of it, a court of equity will not interfere to prevent the misuse or abuse of a trust of a religious nature. In actions in the State court, if the church is not incorporated, an action should be brought in the names of the members collectively, and if they are too numerous to be all named, the suit may be brought in the name of one or more of them for the whole. The same rules apply to religious societies when sued. However, in some dioceses, particularly in the Catholic Church, the title to the church property is in the bishop and he thereby becomes an interested party who must be made either a plaintiff or a defendant.⁵²¹

292. *Rights, Contracts, Torts, Crimes.*—Vested property rights, contracts, torts, and crimes, are usually subject to the laws of the State and the control and judgment of a church tribunal is seldom final. While the State courts have no ecclesiastical jurisdiction and can not revise or question ordinary acts of church discipline, they have the power to adjudicate conflicting claims of parties to the church property or the use of it.⁵²² [159]

293. *Cemetery, Assessments.*—Where a lot was bought for the purpose of building a church but was used for a cemetery, and a church was built at another place and the deed to the lot was taken in the name of the trustees, the pastor and a member of the church corporation were not the proper parties to bring an action to restrain the State from selling the lot to pay the assessments for pavement, as they had no legal or equitable interest for the protection of which they could claim the interposition of a court

⁵²⁰ App. v. Lutheran, 6 Pa. St., 201.

⁵²¹ Keller v. Tracy, 11 Ia., 530; Happy v. Morton, 33 Ill., 398; Leftwig v. Thornton, 18 Ia., 56.

⁵²² Watson v. Jones, 13 Wallace, 679; 20 L. Ed., 666.

of equity.⁵²³

294. *Burned, Revert, Vested.*—The fact that a church on lands donated to the parish, on condition of sustaining the church, burned down, the title did not revert to the grantor's heirs.⁵²⁴ Also land granted a bishop for church uses, vested immediately in him and was not forfeited because it was not used for church purposes.⁵²⁵

[160]

295. *Abandoned, Revert.*—Land granted to trustees and their successors forever in trust to erect a Methodist church, according to its rules and discipline, which was used for such church for a long time and then abandoned and sold to parties who converted it into a blacksmith shop, did not thereupon revert in the absence of a provision to that effect.⁵²⁶

296. *Uses and Trusts.*—The chapter of the Wisconsin statutes on religious societies, although not included in the same title as the chapter abolishing all uses and trusts excepting as therein created, was not intended to prohibit the trusts expressly authorized by the former.⁵²⁷

297. *Trust Funds, Account.*—Where a member of the church received funds to invest in his own name for the benefit of the church, he will be obliged in a court of equity to give full account for the money and its profits.⁵²⁸

298. *Fund, Diverted, Split.*—A fund created for a particular purpose, as the education of children in the faith and doctrines of a denomination at the time the fund is created, can not be diverted from its original object.⁵²⁹ Neither can such a fund be split up when a congregation is divided, but must be retained as

[161]

⁵²³ Dolan v. Mayor, 4 Gill., Md., 394.

⁵²⁴ Goode v. McPherson, 51 Mo., 126.

⁵²⁵ Olcott v. Gabert, 86 Tex., 121; 23 S. W., 985.

⁵²⁶ Strong v. Doty, 32 Wis., 381.

⁵²⁷ Fadness v. Braunburg, 73 Wis., 257; 41 N. W., 84.

⁵²⁸ Weld v. May, 9 Cushing, Mass., 181.

⁵²⁹ Field v. Field, 9 Wendell, N. Y., 394; Stokes v. Dale, 14 N. Y., 901.

created.⁵³⁰

299. Church, Personalty.—A church removed from its foundation and put on rollers was severed from the realty and became personal property.⁵³¹

300. Lease, Purposes.—A religious literary society and scientific corporation has power to lease part of a building owned by it for theatrical and operatic purposes.⁵³²

301. Salary, Lien, Equity.—The church building and the land on which it stands have been held subject to the payment of a debt due for the salary of a pastor of the congregation owning such property.⁵³³ A contractor is entitled to a lien on the church property for work done on the building.⁵³⁴ A person who became liable for the debts of the congregation incurred in the purchase of church property, obtained relief in equity by subjecting the church property to a sale.⁵³⁵ [162]

302. Bankruptcy, Creditors.—There is no provision of law for a church corporation to make an assignment in bankruptcy. However, the church corporation may be sued and a receiver appointed to take possession of the property and sequester the assets.⁵³⁶ But where assignments in bankruptcy and a sale and conveyance of church property are lawful, the church property may be assigned for the benefit of the creditors.⁵³⁷

303. Jurisdiction, Process.—In order to obtain jurisdiction where there are contentions between various persons claiming to be officers, the only safe rule is to serve the process on all those

⁵³⁰ Hendrickson v. Shotwell, 1 N. J. Eq., 577; Calkins v. Cheney, 92 Ill., 463; Park v. Chaplain, 96 Ia., 55; 64 N. W., 674.

⁵³¹ Beech v. Allen, 7 Hun., 441.

⁵³² Catholic v. Gibbons, 3 Weekly Law Bulletin, 581.

⁵³³ Lyons v. Planters, 86 Ga., 485.

⁵³⁴ African v. Duru, 19 La. Ann., 302; Harrisburg v. Washburn, 29 Oregon, 150; 44 Pac., 390.

⁵³⁵ Lynn v. Carson, 32 Grat., Va., 170.

⁵³⁶ Proprietor v. Butler, 56 Mass., 597.

⁵³⁷ DeRuyter v. St. Peter's, 3 N. Y., 238.

who are in the offices or claim the offices upon the occupants of which the papers must be served.⁵³⁸

[163]

304. *States, Property, Restrictions.*—Some States restrict the quantity and use of property that a religious society or church may hold. Other States have no restrictions; but nearly all the States have some statutory law on the subject, which is changed so frequently that it would be useless to give the provisions of such law in this work.⁵³⁹

305. *Land, Limitation.*—A statute of Illinois relating to Catholic societies contains no limitations on property rights, but it was held that the general law applied, and that an organization having ten acres could not acquire additional land by devise. A conveyance of land to a corporation after it has taken all the land allowed by law, is void.⁵⁴⁰ In Kentucky where a church is limited to fifty acres and a devise was made to a church for the benefit of foreign missions, it was held valid under a statute providing that all devises for relief of aged, impotent, poor people, churches, or for any other charitable or humane purposes, shall be valid.⁵⁴¹ Maryland's peculiar law by which leave must be obtained from the Legislature for a conveyance of more than two acres of land, has been construed to give the Legislature authority to ratify a conveyance that otherwise would be void under the statute.⁵⁴² Also, it was held in the same case that a church might acquire more land, but that it would be restricted with regard to its use. A statute prohibiting a religious society from holding more than twenty acres of land applied to a single religious society and

[164]

⁵³⁸ *Perrian v. Methodist*, 4 Abbot's Pr., N. Y., 424; *Unangst v. Shortz*, 5 Horton, Pa. St., 506; *Trustees v. Hoessli*, 13 Wis., 348.

⁵³⁹ *Miller v. Chittenden*, 2 Ia., 315; *Church v. Grace*, 68 N. Y., 570; *Gilmer v. Stone*, 120 U. S., 586; 30 L. Ed., 734; *Kinney v. Kinney's Executors*, 86 Ky., 610; 6 S. W., 593.

⁵⁴⁰ *St. Peter's v. German*, 104 Ill., 440.

⁵⁴¹ *Kinney v. Kinney's Executors*, 86 Ky., 610; 6 S. W., 593.

⁵⁴² *Trustees v. Manning*, 72 Md., 116; 19 At., 599.

not to the denomination.⁵⁴³ Where the territorial law provided that no religious corporation should hold real estate of greater value than \$50,000, a receiver was appointed for the Mormon corporation.⁵⁴⁴

306. *Corporations, Bequests.*—Foreign religious corporations may be entitled to recover bequests made to them in some States; but the general rule is that a foreign religious society has no better right to take property by devise than a domestic corporation.⁵⁴⁵ When the statute requires a conveyance to specify the purpose for which a religious society takes land, the failure to so specify renders the deed void.⁵⁴⁶ But the Young Men's Christian Association was declared not within the limitation because it was not formed for pecuniary benefit and profit and was not under the control of any one denomination nor formed for religious worship.⁵⁴⁷

[165]

307. *Collateral Attack.*—A devise of land to a religious society which will increase the title beyond the amount that is allowed by statute, can not be attacked collaterally by a private individual.⁵⁴⁸ It is for the State and not for the individual to make inquiry into excess on the part of a religious society in its accumulation.⁵⁴⁹

[166]

⁵⁴³ *Morgan v. Leslie, Wright*, 144.

⁵⁴⁴ *U. S. v. Church*, 5 Utah, 361; 15 Pac., 473.

⁵⁴⁵ *In re Ticknor's estate*, 13 Mich., 44; *Levy v. Levy*, 33 N. Y., 97.

⁵⁴⁶ *Trustees v. Hilkin*, 84 Md., 170; 35 At., 9.

⁵⁴⁷ *Hamsher v. Hamsher*, 132 Ill., 273; 23 N. E., 1123; 8 L. R. A., 556.

⁵⁴⁸ *Hanson v. Little Sisters*, 79 Md., 434; 32 At., 1052; *Jones v. Habersham*, 107 U. S., 174; 27 L. Ed., 401.

⁵⁴⁹ *Church v. Grace*, 68 N. Y., 570.

Chapter XXII. Religious Services

308. *Worship, Discipline, Innovations.*—The denomination itself, according to its rules and regulations, determines what services shall form a part of its public worship. The inferior authority in the church has no right to violate the discipline by innovations. Whether or not devotional singing may be accompanied with instrumental music, must be determined by those who administer the discipline of the church.⁵⁵⁰

309. *Doctrines, Temporal Affairs.*—The fact that the congregation sells the pews does not give the owners the right to determine what doctrines shall be preached in the church, nor who shall preach them.⁵⁵¹ A majority of a local church can not change the faith of the church against the protest of the minority.⁵⁵² The corporation of the congregation is governed by the majority only in temporal affairs.⁵⁵³ However, some of the Protestant churches are so independent that a vote of the congregation may transfer them from one denomination to another.⁵⁵⁴

310. *Contributions, Presbyterians, Methodists.*—Where certain persons by contributions built a church and the title was taken and held by the Presbyterians who permitted all other denominations to hold services therein, all of which was a condition of the subscriptions for establishing the church, when the Presbyterians sold out to the Methodists and they held it for their own exclusive use, those who contributed the money had

⁵⁵⁰ *Tartar v. Gibbs*, 24 Md., 323.

⁵⁵¹ *Trinitarian v. Union*, 61 N. H., 384.

⁵⁵² *Smith v. Pedigo*, 145 Ind., 361; 44 N. E., 363; 32 L. R. A., 838.

⁵⁵³ *Miller v. English*, 21 N. J. L., 317.

⁵⁵⁴ *Petot v. Tucker*, 21 N. Y., 267.

the right to resort to the court to enforce their rights to worship in such church.⁵⁵⁵

311. *True Religion, Courts.*—Ordinarily the civil courts do not interfere where there is a question as to which of two or more parties is adhering to the true religious teaching of the denomination. If no question of property or civil rights arises, the court will not interfere.⁵⁵⁶

312. *Heresy, Injunction.*—Where a minister did not preach the doctrine and the entire system of Calvinistic theology received and taught by that denomination, he had no right to the pulpit of the church, and the court granted an injunction against his officiating therein.⁵⁵⁷ [168]

313. *Bequest, Sects, Condition.*—Where a bequest was made to erect a place of worship with the privilege for other sects to worship therein and forever to be used as such, the trustees in whom the title vested had no authority to sell without the consent of the grantor or his heirs; and the congregation having sold the church property and it having been thereafter used for a store, the grantor's heirs had a right of entry for condition broken.⁵⁵⁸

314. *Sexton, Undertaker, Authorities.*—The sexton who has charge of the church property may lawfully remove from the church an undertaker who, after being warned to desist and leave, persists in conducting the funeral in violation of rules prescribed by the authorities of the church.⁵⁵⁹

[169]

⁵⁵⁵ Ludlam v. Higbee, 11 N. J. Eq., 342.

⁵⁵⁶ Happy v. Morton, 33 Ill., 398.

⁵⁵⁷ Sutor v. Spangler, 4 Phil., 331.

⁵⁵⁸ Scott v. Stipe, 12 Ind., 74.

⁵⁵⁹ Commonwealth v. Dougherty, 107 Mass., 243.

Chapter XXIII. Bequests, Devises, And Gifts

315. *Statutes, Wills.*—In some States a religious society can not take under a will, and a bequest of money to a church is void.⁵⁶⁰ In Connecticut any devise to a religious corporation not expressly authorized by statute, is void.⁵⁶¹ In Maryland leave to devise land to a religious society must be obtained from the Legislature.⁵⁶² In all the States it is safest to consult and carefully follow the statute in drawing a will.

316. *Masses, Alabama.*—Formerly as a rule of the English common law, it was held that bequests and devises for the purpose of having Masses said for the soul of the deceased, were void as superstitious uses; but under Article 1 of the Amendments to the United States Constitution, and under similar provisions in the constitutions of the several States, the English rule does not prevail in the United States. However, Alabama adopted the English rule.⁵⁶³ By reading the foot-note to the Alabama case, it will be found that a majority of the States hold that such bequests are lawful.⁵⁶⁴ Even in Alabama if the bequest had been to a clergyman or a certain person and accompanied by a request to say Masses, the court might have allowed it.⁵⁶⁵

[170]

⁵⁶⁰ In re Wright's estate, Myr. Prob., 213 Cal.

⁵⁶¹ Green v. Dennis, 6 Conn., 293; Ferguson v. Hedges, 1 Harr., 524.

⁵⁶² Murphy v. Dallam, 1 Bland, 529.

⁵⁶³ Festorazzi v. St. Joseph's, 104 Ala., 327; 18 So., 394; 25 L. R. A., 360; Ex parte Schuler, 134 Mass., 436; Seiber's Appeal, 9 At., Pa., 863; Holland v. Alcock, 108 N. Y., 312; 16 N. E., 305.

⁵⁶⁴ Festorazzi v. St. Joseph's, 104 Ala., 327; 18 So., 394; 25 L. R. A., 360.

⁵⁶⁵ McHugh v. McCole, 97 Wis., 166; 72 N. W., 352.

317. *Name, Bequest, Corporation.*—A mistake in a name does not render a bequest or a gift void if the person intended can be identified.⁵⁶⁶ Also, a devise may be made to a corporation not yet organized and when it is organized the gift or devise will vest. During the interim, it will remain in abeyance.⁵⁶⁷

318. *Clergyman, Undue Influence.*—A clergyman who is a grantee in a deed from a parishioner, although deriving no benefit therefrom, has the burden of showing good faith in the transaction as the law presumes that he is guilty of undue influence. This presumption is further strengthened by proof of the enfeebled condition of the grantor by age and illness and his susceptibleness to influence. Where the property conveyed in trust for the parish was greatly in excess of its needs, the deed was set aside.⁵⁶⁸ [171]

319. *Contest, Secession.*—In case of a devise to a church which is claimed by two societies, it is the duty of the court to decide in favor of those who adhere to the ecclesiastical government of the church which was in operation at the time the trust was declared.⁵⁶⁹ However, to maintain such action it must be brought by the proper parties.⁵⁷⁰

320. *Bequests, Membership.*—Bequests left to individuals on condition that they shall remain members of a certain church, can be obtained only by complying with such condition.⁵⁷¹

321. *Conditions, Religious Tenets.*—In order to determine the conditions of a trust the religious tenets of the donor may be shown to aid in construction of ambiguous provisions.⁵⁷²

322. *Name, Uncertainty.*—A bequest to Georgetown

⁵⁶⁶ Wilson v. Perry, 29 W. Va., 169; 1 S. E., 302.

⁵⁶⁷ Jones v. Habersham, 107 U. S., 174; 27 L. Ed., 401.

⁵⁶⁸ Good v. Zook, 116 Ia., 582; 88 N. W., 376.

⁵⁶⁹ Trustees v. Sturgeon, 9 Pa. St., 321.

⁵⁷⁰ Scott v. Curle, 9 B. Mon., 17; Ante, 278, 290.

⁵⁷¹ In re Paulson's will, 127 Wis., 612; 107 N. W., 484.

⁵⁷² Robertson v. Bullions, 11 N. Y., 243.

[172]

University, in the District of Columbia, which was incorporated under the name of "The President and Directors of Georgetown College," is not void for uncertainty, as the only institution of learning in the District of Columbia is Georgetown College.⁵⁷³

[173]

323. *Future Uses, Uncertainty.*—A devise to a foundling or eleemosynary institution, whenever the Christians should create one which the trustees approved, is valid.⁵⁷⁴ And a devise to the "First Christian church erected or to be erected in the village of Telfairville, in Burke county, or to such persons as may become trustees of the same," is good as a charitable bequest.⁵⁷⁵ A bequest to a priest to hold in trust and pay over to the Sisters for the Poor, is valid.⁵⁷⁶ A bequest for the care of a tombstone is valid in some States and not in others without a statutory provision.⁵⁷⁷ A bequest to the bishop "to be by him used for Roman Catholic charitable institutions in his diocese," sufficiently describes the beneficiaries and is good.⁵⁷⁸ Also, a bequest to Bishop England "in trust for the Ladies of the Ursuline Order residing in Charleston in the State of South Carolina," was held for "The Ladies of the Ursuline Community of the city of Charleston."⁵⁷⁹ A bequest for Masses "to a Roman Catholic priest that shall succeed me in this place," was held void for uncertainty.⁵⁸⁰ A bequest in trust to a bishop by name to sell and give the proceeds to a society named, is not a devise to the society, but to the bishop in trust.⁵⁸¹

324. *Education, Priesthood.*—A devise or bequest to a clergyman of property to be used for the education of poor

⁵⁷³ 62 Cen. L. J., 167.

⁵⁷⁴ Ould v. Washington, 95 U. S., 303; 24 L. Ed., 450.

⁵⁷⁵ Jones v. Habersham, 107 U. S., 174; 27 L. Ed., 401.

⁵⁷⁶ Darcy v. Kelley, 153 Mass., 433; 26 N. E., 1110.

⁵⁷⁷ Bronson v. Strouse, 57 Conn., 147; 17 At., 699.

⁵⁷⁸ Tichenor v. Brewer's, 98 Ky., 349; 33 S. W., 86.

⁵⁷⁹ Banker v. Phelan, 4 Barb., 80.

⁵⁸⁰ Bowers v. Fromm, Add., Pa., 362.

⁵⁸¹ Germania v. Baltes, 113 Ill., 29.

Catholic boys for the priesthood, was sustained in court as sufficiently definite for performance.⁵⁸²

325. Charitable Trust, Cy-Pres.—Equity will not allow a charitable trust to fail for want of a trustee, but will appoint one.⁵⁸³ The doctrine of *cy-pres* as applied to charitable gifts and trusts, is not in force in Alabama, Connecticut, Delaware, Indiana, Maryland, Iowa, New York, North Carolina, nor Wisconsin; but seems to prevail in California, Illinois, Massachusetts, Missouri, Pennsylvania, and Rhode Island.

326. Error, Ambiguity.—Great latitude is allowed in charitable bequests, devises, and gifts, in proving *aliunde* the beneficiary [174] intended where there is error in the name or a latent ambiguity.⁵⁸⁴ The religion of the testator will be considered in proving intention.

327. Dissolution, Resulting Trust.—On dissolution of a religious society, the money collected or derived from the sale of property goes back as a resulting trust to the contributors.⁵⁸⁵

328. Charity, Institutions.—To determine what is a charitable trust, devise, or gift, it is necessary to particularly bear in mind the most comprehensive definition of charity. Legacies for schools, churches, libraries, cemeteries, the poor, hospitals, and numerous other eleemosynary institutions, have been sustained under charitable bequests when they otherwise would have failed.⁵⁸⁶

[175]

⁵⁸² McDonald v. Shaw, 98 S. W., 952.

⁵⁸³ Beaty v. Kurtz, 27 U. S., 566; 7 L. Ed., 521.

⁵⁸⁴ Heiss v. Murphy, 40 Wis., 276; Fadness v. Braunburg, 73 Wis., 257; 41 N. W., 84.

⁵⁸⁵ Coe v. Washington, 149 Mass., 543; 21 N. E., 966.

⁵⁸⁶ Clark v. Brown, 108 S. W., 421, Tex.

Chapter XXIV. Taxation

329. *Purposes, Exempt.*—Only church property that is actually used for church or charitable purposes, is exempt from taxation. Property held for its increase or profit is not exempt.⁵⁸⁷ Land bought for a church on which no work on the church is yet begun, is not exempt from taxation.⁵⁸⁸

330. *Lot Isolated, Not Exempt.*—A lot isolated from the other property of the church of a congregation, is not exempt because the congregation intends to build a church thereon in the future, and actually did build a church thereon two years later.⁵⁸⁹

331. *Bishop's Residence, Hospital.*—Real property the title to which is in the archbishop in fee in accordance with the discipline of the Catholic Church, is not owned by a religious association so as to exempt it from taxation. The records do not show a trust for the diocese nor any other beneficiary. A court will not take judicial notice of the laws of the Catholic Church.⁵⁹⁰ But property used as a hospital to care for the sick and wounded of all races and religions indiscriminately, with or without pay according to the ability of the patient, is a benevolent institution engaged in a work of charity, and comes under the law of tax exemption.⁵⁹¹

332. *Parsonage, Rented.*—A parsonage owned by a congregation and used only as a residence for the clergyman is not exempt because of some part of it being also used for alleged religious services, to-wit: morning prayers of the children before

⁵⁸⁷ *Parker v. Quinn*, 23 Utah, 332; 64 Pac., 961.

⁵⁸⁸ *All Saints v. Brookline*, 59 N. E., 1003, Mass.

⁵⁸⁹ *Green v. Outagamie*, 76 Wis., 587; 45 N. W., 536.

⁵⁹⁰ *Katzer v. City*, 104 Wis., 16; 80 N. W., 41.

⁵⁹¹ *St. Joseph Hospital v. Ashland*, 96 Wis., 636; 72 N. W., 43.

school, a sewing society, and a meeting place for Sunday-school teachers.⁵⁹² However, a house and lot rented and kept by the minister was exempt from taxation.⁵⁹³

333. *Masonic Order, Charity, Elks.*—A charity which is confined exclusively to the members of the Masonic Order and their families or to the widows and children of deceased members or those who are directly or indirectly connected with the society, is not purely a public charity within the provisions of the constitution relating to the exemption of institutions of purely public charity from taxation.⁵⁹⁴ And property held by the Elks for entertainment and to promote social intercourse was held not exempt.⁵⁹⁵ [177]

334. *Supporting Church, Mississippi.*—In the early ages of the States several of them had laws for taxing all the property in parishes laid out by the State for the support of Protestant churches. Gradually these laws were eliminated and at the present time there is probably no State excepting Mississippi that uses money for the support of a church. Maine changed her laws in 1821, and other States followed from time to time.⁵⁹⁶ While those taxes were collected, no land within the parish was exempt in some States and in others the property of a non-resident was exempt.⁵⁹⁷ In New Hampshire and Pennsylvania, a person could not be compelled to pay the taxes to a denomination of which he was not a member.⁵⁹⁸

335. *Appropriations, Contracts, Rent.*—Under the constitution of the United States, Congress can not make [178]

⁵⁹² Ramsey v. Church, 45 Minn., 229; 47 N. W., 783.

⁵⁹³ Gray v. Lafayette, 65 Wis., 567; 27 N. W., 311.

⁵⁹⁴ Newport v. Masonic, 108 Ky., 333; 56 S. W., 405; 49 L. R. A., 252.

⁵⁹⁵ Trustees v. City, 122 Wis., 452; 100 N. W., 837.

⁵⁹⁶ Dahl v. Kimball, 6 Me., 171.

⁵⁹⁷ Turner v. Inhabitants, 16 Mass., 208; Goodell Mfg. Co. v. Trask, 28 Mass., 514.

⁵⁹⁸ Muzzy v. Wilkins, Smith, 1; Ebau v. Hendell, 5 Watts, 43; 30 Am. Dec., 291.

appropriations nor give aid to any denomination. Also, similar provisions are in many of the constitutions of the States. However, many cases arise out of contracts, which border upon these various rules, and in some States the constitutional provision of the State is such that the State Legislature may legislate concerning religions and give certain aid and support thereto. Paying rent to a congregation for a school-room is not an appropriation or aid to a church contrary to the constitution.⁵⁹⁹

[179]

⁵⁹⁹ Miller v. Board, 19 Ill. App., 48; Municipality of Ponce v. R. C. A. Ch., 28 Sup. Ct. R., 737; Reuben Quick-Bear v. Leupp, 28 Sup. Ct. Repr., 690; Dorner v. Dist., 118 N. W., 353.

Chapter XXV. Eleemosynary Institutions

336. *Poor, Institutions, Negligence.*—As hospitals, homes for the poor, and other eleemosynary institutions are supported by money given to charity, it would be a diversion of the trust funds if such institutions could be compelled to pay damages for negligence causing personal injury or death. The general rule is that the person causing the injury may be liable, but not the institution.⁶⁰⁰ However, a charitable institution has been held liable for negligence of its manager to notify a nurse of the contagious nature of a case assigned to her.⁶⁰¹

337. *Surgeon, Gratuitous Services.*—A charitable medical institution is not liable for the negligence of its surgeon in operating upon a patient gratuitously where such institution exercises due care in employing a surgeon deemed competent. The fact that besides such gratuitous services, medicine is taught therein for tuition fees and patients who are able to pay are charged a small fee for room, board, nursing, etc., but no fee from the patient to the doctor, does not change it from a charitable institution.⁶⁰² However, a hospital that is an adjunct to a medical school is liable.⁶⁰³ [180]

338. *Charitable Institution.*—An institution that limits its benefactions to the members of a particular denomination is, in the absence of a statute to the contrary, a charitable institution.⁶⁰⁴

⁶⁰⁰ 53 Cen. L. J., 224.

⁶⁰¹ Hewitt v. Woman's, 73 N. H., 556; 64 At., 190.

⁶⁰² Collins v. New York, 69 N. Y. Supp., 106.

⁶⁰³ Louisville v. Hammock, 106 S. W., Ky., 219; 14 L. R. A., N. S., 784.

⁶⁰⁴ Indianapolis v. Grant, 25 Ind., 518.

This rule has exceptions.⁶⁰⁵

339. *Charter, Real Estate.*—The trustees of a religious, literary, or other benevolent society, can not, irrespective of the powers granted by its charter, purchase and hold real estate under trusts of their own creation which will protect their property from creditors.⁶⁰⁶

[181]

340. *Mortmain, Title, Trust.*—The statute of mortmain was never in force in Pennsylvania, so a religious corporation can hold the legal title to land in trust for the heir-at-law of a testator who has devised it to the corporation in trust for uses that were void under the English law.⁶⁰⁷ The only States that have statutes of mortmain are Mississippi and North Carolina. Yet in those States the statutes are somewhat different from the law of England.

341. *Public Institutions, Support.*—Benevolent and charitable institutions under a church are not public institutions, and moneys can not be appropriated for their support.⁶⁰⁸

342. *Nuns, Vows, Property.*—When joining a society of nuns, one of the vows taken was that all property should be held in common and whatever property was received after taking the vows should belong to the society. A person who left the order was not concluded from making claim for her property.⁶⁰⁹

[182]

⁶⁰⁵ Newport v. Masonic, 108 Ky., 333; 56 S. W., 405; 49 L. R. A., 252.

⁶⁰⁶ McGee v. German, 13 N. J. Eq., 77.

⁶⁰⁷ Miller v. Lerch, Wall. Jr., Pa., 210.

⁶⁰⁸ St. Mary's Industrial School for Boys v. Brown, 45 Md., 310.

⁶⁰⁹ White v. Price, 108 N. Y., 661; 15 N. E., 427.

Chapter XXVI. Schools

343. *Parent, Education, State, Parochial Schools.*—The right of the parent to use judgment as to the proper necessities of his child, including board, lodging, and education, is generally conceded. However, there must be no abuse of these parental rights, as the child also has rights that even a parent can not infringe. Therefore, the State may require a reasonable opportunity for the education of every child; and if the parent can not give it on account of his poverty, it is in the power of the State to take his child in charge and furnish him an education. The right of the State to make laws requiring a parent to send his child to school between certain ages, as from four to twenty-one years, is well settled. The question of the parent's being obliged to send his child to the public schools or being forbidden to send his child to a private or parochial school, is not settled in some States; but it is being settled in favor of the parent. The Kentucky constitution contains this provision: "... nor shall any man be compelled to [183] send his child to any school to which he may be conscientiously opposed."⁶¹⁰ The right of the State to supervise or inspect private and parochial schools under the police power of the State can not be questioned.⁶¹¹

344. *Orphan Asylums, School Moneys.*—In 1850 the New York Legislature enacted a law as follows: "The schools of the several incorporated orphan asylums within the State other than those in the city of New York, shall participate in the distribution of the school moneys in the same manner and to the same extent in proportion to the number of children educated therein, as the

⁶¹⁰ Sec. 5, Ky. Constitution; Contra: N. H. Constitution, art. 6.

⁶¹¹ *Donahue v. Richards*, 38 Me., 376; *State v. Baily*, 157 Ind., 324; 61 N. E., 730; 54 Cen. L. J., 142.

common schools in their respective cities and districts.” The court ruled that moneys devoted by the constitution to the State for the support of common schools could not be distributed under the act, for the reason that such asylums are not public schools; but moneys from other sources might be paid for the education of such orphan children in proportion to their number to those educated in the common schools of their respective cities and districts.⁶¹² The schools kept by the Roman Catholic Orphan

[184] Asylum Society of the city of Brooklyn, are not common schools within the meaning of the constitution, and a provision of law that such schools should share in the distribution of school moneys raised by the State was void.⁶¹³

345. *Contract, Direct Payment, Lease.*—No school of any denomination or sect is entitled to public moneys for its support, either by contract for the education of students therein or by direct payment from the government.⁶¹⁴ A school conducted by the Catholic Church in which religious instruction is given to Catholic children is a sectarian institution within the constitutional provision against using public funds for sectarian purposes; but public school money expended for such a school conducted by this school district could not be recovered by suit against the school officers.⁶¹⁵ Also, a school maintained as a charity under direction of trustees elected by the town where they must be of a certain religion, is not entitled to public moneys.⁶¹⁶ But the lease of a part of a parochial school building or the basement of a church for public school purposed does not violate the law.⁶¹⁷ In the States of Maine, Iowa, Massachusetts,

[185]

⁶¹² St. Patrick's v. Rochester, 34 How. Pr., 227.

⁶¹³ People v. Board, 13 Barb., N. Y., 400.

⁶¹⁴ Synod v. State, 2 S. Dak., 366; 50 N. W., 632; 14 L. R. A., 418.

⁶¹⁵ State v. Hallock, 16 Nev., 373; Dorner v. School Dist., 118 N. W., Wis., 353 (Nov. 27, 1908).

⁶¹⁶ Jenkins v. Andover, 103 Mass., 94.

⁶¹⁷ Millard v. Board, 121 Ill., 297; 10 N. E., 669; Dorner v. School Dist., 118 N. W., Wis., 353.

Illinois, Ohio, Kansas, and Texas, the reading of the King James Bible and the singing of hymns and saying prayers have been held not sectarian.⁶¹⁸ But in Wisconsin, the court ruled the other way.⁶¹⁹

346. *Teacher, Lord's Prayer, Exercise.*—"A public school teacher, who, for the purpose of quieting the pupils and preparing them for their regular studies, repeats the Lord's Prayer and the Twenty-second Psalm as a morning exercise, without comment or remark, in which none of the pupils are required to participate, is not conducting a form of religious worship or giving sectarian or religious instruction."⁶²⁰ Substantially the same rule applies in Pennsylvania.⁶²¹ However, similar religious exercises conducted by Catholic teachers have generally been held sectarian and not permissible in public schools.⁶²² [186]

347. *Ohio, Directors, Bible.*—The constitution of the State of Ohio does not enjoin nor require religious instruction or the reading of religious books in the public schools. The board of directors of a district has charge of the instruction and books to be used therein, and their official discretion will not be interfered with. Therefore, they were authorized to have the Bible read at the opening of the school.⁶²³

348. *Public School, Bible, Prayer.*—The committee having

⁶¹⁸ *Church v. Bullock*, 100 S. W., Tex., 1025; *Donahue v. Richards*, 38 Me., 379; 56 C. L. J., 81.

⁶¹⁹ *State v. Board*, 76 Wis., 177; 44 N. W., 967; 7 L. R. A., 330; 53 Am. R., 282; 14 L. R. A., 419; *Dorner v. School Dist.*, 118 N. W., Wis., 353 (Nov. 27, 1908).

⁶²⁰ *Billard v. Board*, 69 Kan., 53; 76 Pac., 422; 66 L. R. A., 166.

⁶²¹ *Stevenson v. Hanyon*, 7 Pa. Co. Ct., 585; *State v. Board*, 76 Wis., 177; 44 N. W., 967; 7 L. R. A., 330; *State v. Scheve*, 65 Neb., 853; 91 N. W., 846; 59 L. R. A., 927.

⁶²² *Dorner v. School District*, 118 N. W., Wis., 353 (Nov. 27, 1908); *County v. Industrial School*, 125 Ill., 540; 18 N. E., 183; 1 L. R. A., 437; 8 Am. St. Rep., 386; *O'Connor v. Hendrick*, 184 N. Y., 421; 77 N. E., 612.

⁶²³ *Board v. Minor*, 23 Ohio, 250; *Campanas v. Calderhead*, 17 Mont., 548; 44 Pac., 83; 36 L. R. A., 277.

control of a public school may make a rule requiring the school to be opened by reading from the Bible and prayer every morning, and that each child shall bow the head during such prayers; that any scholar shall be excused from bowing the head whose parents request it; and when any scholar refuses to obey such rule and his parents refuse to request that he shall be excused, the committee may exclude such scholar from the school.⁶²⁴

[187]

349. *Text-Books, State.*—The State has the power to grant authority to the State Board of Education to select and prescribe text-books to be used in the public schools of the State.⁶²⁵

350. *Bible, Conscience, Constitution.*—The parent of a child expelled from the public school can not maintain an action against the school committee by whose orders it was done. In the same case it was held that a rule requiring every scholar to read a particular version of the Bible, though it may be against the conscience of some to do so, does not violate the letter or spirit of the constitution.⁶²⁶

351. *Schoolhouse, Sunday-School Purposes.*—The inhabitants of a school district have no right to use the schoolhouse for religious meeting on Sunday against the objection of any taxpayer in the district, notwithstanding that the officers of the district granted such right. A taxpayer may obtain an injunction against such use, although the injury to him be very slight, as he has no other remedy.⁶²⁷ A district school board can not authorize the use of the schoolhouse for any other than school purposes.⁶²⁸

[188]

352. *Child, Immoral Character.*—The school committee in order to maintain purity and discipline, may exclude therefrom a child whom they deem to be of licentious or immoral character,

⁶²⁴ *Spiller v. Woburn*, 12 Allen, Mass., 127.

⁶²⁵ *School Commissioners v. State Board*, 26 Md., 505.

⁶²⁶ *Donahue v. Richards*, 38 Me., 379; 56 Cen. L. J., 81.

⁶²⁷ *Scofield v. State*, 27 Conn., 499.

⁶²⁸ *School v. Arnold*, 21 Wis., 657.

although such character is not manifested in acts of licentiousness or immorality within the school.⁶²⁹

353. *Parents, Studies, Teacher.*—The requirement of a teacher that a scholar in grammar shall write English composition is a reasonable one, and refusal to comply therewith in the absence of a request from his parents that he be excused therefrom, will justify the expulsion of a scholar from school.⁶³⁰ But when a parent selects certain studies that the law provides to be taught for his child to study, the teacher has no right to insist that the child shall take some other study and inflict punishment to enforce obedience.⁶³¹

354. *Chastisement, Cruel.*—The chastisement of a scholar by the schoolmaster must not be excessive or cruel, but it should be reasonably proportioned to the offense and within the bounds of moderation.⁶³²

[189]

355. *Schoolmaster, Authority.*—Although a schoolmaster has in general no right to punish a pupil for misconduct after the dismissal of the school for the day and the return of the pupil to his home, yet he may on the pupil's return to school punish him for any misbehavior, though committed out of school, which has a direct and immediate tendency to injure the school and to subvert the master's authority. The fact that the master acted in good faith will not excuse him from damages for the punishment of a scholar where the punishment is clearly excessive and unnecessary. However, where there is a reasonable doubt the master should have the benefit of it.⁶³³

356. *Force, Assistance.*—And where a scholar in school hours places himself in the desk of the instructor and refuses to leave

⁶²⁹ *Sherman v. Charleston*, 8 Cushing, Mass., 160; *State v. Board*, 116 N. W., 232; 67 Cen. L. J., 241.

⁶³⁰ *Guernsey v. Pitkin*, 32 Vt., 224.

⁶³¹ *Wood v. Morrow*, 35 Wis., 59.

⁶³² *Anderson v. State*, 3 Head, Tenn., 455.

⁶³³ *Lander v. Seaver*, 32 Vt., 114.

it on the request of the master, the master may immediately use such force and call to his assistance such aid from another person as may be necessary to remove the scholar. The same rule would apply to any one who is not a scholar and intrudes upon the school.⁶³⁴

[190]

357. *White, Unmarried.*—Before the adoption of the fourteenth amendment it was necessary in most States that in addition to the child being under twenty-one years of age, he must be of white blood and unmarried.⁶³⁵ In Ohio, negroes, Indians, and children of less than half white blood, were not entitled to the benefit of the school fund; and even where this would entirely exclude from school children not sufficient to form a district, still it was held that such children could not attend the white school.⁶³⁶

358. *Facilities, the Constitution.*—So long as abundant facilities are given for the education of all the children of a district, it is not a violation of the constitution of the United States to keep negro and white people separated. The same rule applies to courts.⁶³⁷

[191]

359. *Residents, Public Schools.*—Children in a German Protestant orphan asylum are not “children, wards, or apprentices of actual residents” in the district of the asylum, and therefore are not entitled to enter the public schools of the district.⁶³⁸

360. *Board, Majority.*—Two of the three members of a school board have no authority to act by themselves, and their individual agreement to dismiss a teacher is void. A school board can only act at a duly called meeting of the board, and then the majority

⁶³⁴ Stevens v. Fassett, 27 Me., 266.

⁶³⁵ Draper v. Cambridge, 20 Ind., 268.

⁶³⁶ Lane v. Baker, 12 Ohio St., 237; State v. City, 19 Ohio, 178; Van Camp v. Board, 9 Ohio St., 406.

⁶³⁷ Ex parte Plessy, 45 La. Ann., 80; 11 So., 948; 16 Sup. Ct. R., 1138; 163 U. S., 537; 41 L. Ed., 256; 18 L. R. A., 639.

⁶³⁸ State v. School Directors, 10 Ohio St., 448.

vote duly taken decides.⁶³⁹

[192]

⁶³⁹ Jackson v. Hampden, 16 Me., 184.

Chapter XXVII. Parent And Child

361. *Custody, Maternal Relatives, Father.*—A parent is entitled to the care and custody of his child if he is competent to transact his own business and not otherwise unsuitable. And the mere fact that the maternal relatives who have had the care of the child from its birth have become attached to it and desire to continue to care for it and are able to secure it better advantages than its parent, does not render the parent unsuitable to have its care and custody within the meaning of the statute. Also, the want of a sympathetic nature or cold reserve in a parent or the fact that he is away on business a great deal of the time, is not sufficient to render him unsuitable. But the right of the father may be lost or forfeited by his ill-conduct, gross ill-treatment, cruelty, or abandonment, or when his conduct and life are such as are injurious to the morals and interest of his child. When the father dies or forfeits his right for reasons already given, the mother, if alive, succeeds to all those rights, subject, however, to the same conditions as the father. And in the case of a child of tender years, the good of the child has to be regarded as the predominant consideration.⁶⁴⁰

[193]

362. *Mother, Illegitimate, Father.*—The mother has a right to the care and custody of her illegitimate child to the same extent that a parent has to his legitimate child.⁶⁴¹ The putative father on the mother's death succeeds to the mother's rights as against the maternal relatives and may secure the custody of the child by *habeas corpus*. This rule is different from the one that prevailed in the Roman law.⁶⁴² However, when the father has given bond

⁶⁴⁰ Markwell v. Pereles, 95 Wis., 406 and 424; 69 N. W., 798 and 984.

⁶⁴¹ Perry v. State, 113 Ga., 936; 39 S. E., 315.

⁶⁴² Aycock v. Harrington, 84 Miss., 204; 36 So., 245; 65 L. R. A., 689.

for the care, support, and education of an illegitimate child, his right to the custody of the child may be superior.⁶⁴³

363. Legitimized.—And when under a statute a child is legitimized by acknowledgment or subsequent marriage, the father has the better right to its custody.⁶⁴⁴ Usually there are many provisions in the statutes of the various States which substantially provide for the rights, relative and otherwise, of the parents and child in such cases. [194]

364. Punishment, Instrument, Murder.—A parent or a person *in foro domestico* or *in loco parentis* may give reasonable corrective punishment with a fit instrument to a child. But if a parent or master whips a child so that it dies, he is guilty of manslaughter. And if he uses lethal instruments of punishment, he is guilty of murder.⁶⁴⁵ Where a mother in anger threw a poker at one child and hit and killed another child, she was guilty of manslaughter.⁶⁴⁶ The punishment always becomes unlawful when it is excessive, and drunkenness is no excuse.⁶⁴⁷

365. Guardian, Religion, Courts.—In England where a child was taken from the testamentary guardian, who after the death of the testator changed her religion from a Protestant to a Catholic, it was held thereby to be incompetent to continue as guardian.⁶⁴⁸ And in New York it was held that where the father and mother were Catholics, the guardian must endeavor to bring the children up in that faith, as a guardian will not be permitted to proselyte wards.⁶⁴⁹ But where a father who was a Catholic allowed his child to be brought up by a maternal aunt who was a Protestant, until the child was fourteen years of age, the father was not then entitled to the child's custody for the purpose of having [195]

⁶⁴³ Wright v. Bennett, 7 Ill., 587.

⁶⁴⁴ Graham v. Bennett, 2 Cal., 503.

⁶⁴⁵ State v. Harris, 63 N. C., 1.

⁶⁴⁶ Rex. v. Canon, 7 Car. and P., 438.

⁶⁴⁷ Rex. v. Griffen, 6 Cox. C. C., 402.

⁶⁴⁸ F. v. F., 1 Ch. (1902), 688.

⁶⁴⁹ In re Jacques, 82 N. Y. Sup., 986.

it instructed in his own faith.⁶⁵⁰ Courts will not interfere with the religion of a child, but will allow it to be brought up in the religion of its parents; however, the best interests of the child will be considered by the court without conceding everything else to its religion.⁶⁵¹

366. *Convent, Consent.*—A daughter under age who entered a convent to become a nun without the consent of her mother, may, on a writ of *habeas corpus* on the petition of her mother, be required to leave the convent and return to her home.⁶⁵²

367. *Adoption, Rights, Duties.*—Persons of suitable age and circumstances to enter the marital relations, may adopt a child. When a married couple do not unite in adopting a child, the consent of the non-adopting spouse must be obtained. Also, if the child's parents are living, their consent is necessary unless they have lost their paternal rights by abandonment or divorce.

The decree of adoption may be set aside for good cause. The adopted parent has all the rights over and duties toward the person of the adopted child that a natural parent has, including necessities and religious training. Usually the child inherits from the adopted parents, but the adopted parents do not inherit from the child. The statutes on adoption are not the same in the several States, but they cover the subject and must be strictly followed.⁶⁵³

368. *Infancy, Manumission, Marriage.*—At common law a person is an infant until he is twenty-one years of age. Statutes have modified that rule so that girls in some States, and both girls and boys in others, may contract marriage at an earlier age without the parental consent. Generally, an infant can not

⁶⁵⁰ *In re Marshall*, 33 N. Y. S., 104.

⁶⁵¹ *Kennedy v. Borah*, 226 Ill., 243; 80 N. E., 767.

⁶⁵² *Prieto v. Alphonso*, 52 La. Ann., 631; 27 So., 153.

⁶⁵³ *Clarkson v. Hatton*, 143 Mo., 47; 44 S. W., 761; 65 Am. St. R., 635; *Matter of Johnson*, 98 Cal., 531; 33 Pac., 260; 21 L. R. A., 380; *Schlitz v. Roenitz*, 86 Wis., 31; 56 N. W., 194; 39 Am. St. R., 873; 21 L. R. A., 482; *Markwell v. Pereles*, 95 Wis., 406; 69 N. W., 798; 67 Cen. L. J., 197.

contract marriage without the consent of the living parent or guardian unless the child has been manumitted. Where the boy was under the age of consent, but he falsely told the priest that he was of full age, his father had the marriage annulled.⁶⁵⁴

[197]

⁶⁵⁴ Elliott v. Elliott, 77 Wis., 634; 46 N. W., 806; 57 L. R. A., 155; 10 L. R. A., 568.

Chapter XXVIII. Husband And Wife

369. *Custody, Father.*—A husband is entitled to the custody of his wife against her father, and where a son-in-law killed his father-in-law in resisting the latter from taking his daughter out of his (the son-in-law's) house, the court held that it could not be more than manslaughter; and if it were necessary to kill to protect and maintain his wife, the defendant was not guilty.⁶⁵⁵ But for good cause and without malice a parent may advise his child to leave spouse.⁶⁵⁶

370. *Corrective Authority, Services, Domicile.*—In America a husband gains no right to corrective authority over his wife. He can neither whip her nor use abusive language to her. The same rule applies to the wife, as they stand equal before the law.⁶⁵⁷ However, a husband is entitled to all the services of his wife and a promise to pay her extra for housework can not be enforced.⁶⁵⁸ Also, the husband has the right to determine their place of domicile, and if the wife unreasonably refuses to accompany her husband, it is desertion, for which he may obtain a divorce.⁶⁵⁹

[198]

[199]

⁶⁵⁵ Cole v. State, 75 S. W., 527; 45 Tex.; Cr. App., 225; 57 Cen. L. J., 341.

⁶⁵⁶ Mutter v. Senibbs, 79 N. E., 762, Mass.

⁶⁵⁷ Commonwealth v. McAfee, 108 Mass., 458.

⁶⁵⁸ Tuttle v. Sutts, 96 Pac., 260.

⁶⁵⁹ Gleason v. Gleason, 4 Wis., 64; 14 Cyc, 846.

Chapter XXIX. Indians

371. *Indians, Citizens, Wards.*—There are a great number of statutory provisions concerning Indians, both in the United States statutes and in the statutes of the several States, most of which are not of great importance at the present time, as the Indians are confined to a few States. When they become citizens of the State in which they reside, their status is the same as other citizens; but so long as they remain in their tribal relations they are taken care of as wards of the Union.

372. *Schools, Cemeteries, Churches.*—In Oklahoma there are schools provided for them. When a tribe cedes 160 acres to the United States, it will give it a school for ten years, and as much longer as it deems necessary. Also, the Indians may have their own cemeteries, schools, and churches, where the Indians belong to the tribes, and they are allowed lands therefor.⁶⁶⁰ In other States, under the general law, the money of Indian minors may be held in the treasury by the Secretary of the Interior and paid to parents and guardians in such sums and at such times as the Secretary in his discretion may determine.⁶⁶¹ There is no doubt that out of those moneys, parents might pay for their children at private schools.⁶⁶² [200]

373. *Inspectors, Duties.*—Under the United States laws, inspectors are appointed to visit Indian agencies and investigate all matters concerning them and to examine all contracts and accounts with the Indians and make report thereon to the Secretary

⁶⁶⁰ 32 St. At. L., 636 and 645.

⁶⁶¹ Chap. 1402, U. S. Laws of 1904.

⁶⁶² Quick-Bear v. Leupp, 28 Sup. Ct. Rep., 690 (1908).

of the Interior. The contracts for support of religion, schools, and charitable institutions, come under their duties.⁶⁶³

374. President, Trades.—The President may cause Indians to be instructed in trades and agriculture and have them taught the elementary branches.⁶⁶⁴

375. Commissioner, School, Rations, Bible, Sectarian.—Another officer of great importance is the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, who has most to do with the education and schools of the Indians.⁶⁶⁵ He may require parents and guardians to send children to school and withhold rations from them for failure so to do. Also, there is a fund under the control of the United States as trustee, with which he may make contracts for the education of Indian children at private schools.⁶⁶⁶ However, the jurisdiction of the commissioner over Indian children does not extend to those off the reservation.⁶⁶⁷ Among other provisions of the United States statutes is the following: “The Christian Bible may be taught in the native language of the Indians if in the judgment of the persons in charge of the school it may be deemed conducive to the moral welfare and instruction of the pupils in such schools.”⁶⁶⁸ The Bible continues its position among the Indians, but appropriations for the Church are cut off by the following provision: “It is hereby declared to be the settled policy of the government to hereafter make no appropriations whatever for education in any sectarian school.”⁶⁶⁹

[201]

[202]

⁶⁶³ Sec. 2045, U. S. Statutes.

⁶⁶⁴ Secs. 2071 and 2072, U. S. Statutes, and Chap. 188, Laws of 1895.

⁶⁶⁵ 26 St. At. L., 1014.

⁶⁶⁶ Quick-Bear v. Leupp, 28 Sup. Ct. Repr., 690; 27 St. L., 628 and 635.

⁶⁶⁷ In re Lehigh-puc-ka-chee, 98 Fed., 429.

⁶⁶⁸ Chap. 503, Laws of 1888.

⁶⁶⁹ Chap. 3, Laws of 1897.

Chapter XXX. Juvenile Courts

376. *Reformatories, Object, Liberty.*—During the past few years juvenile courts have been created for the purpose of committing children to reformatories. The proceedings are not criminal actions, but of an equitable nature.⁶⁷⁰ However, as the object is to deprive the child of its liberty, the statute must be strictly construed and followed.⁶⁷¹ An infant can not waive a right.⁶⁷² If a child has been wrongfully committed or is wrongfully detained, the proper remedy for his discharge is a writ of *habeas corpus*.⁶⁷³

[203]

⁶⁷⁰ 61 Cen. L. J., 101, 289; 62 Cen. L. J., 215, 219.

⁶⁷¹ *McCann v. County*, 6 Mont., 297.

⁶⁷² *Hubbard v. Railway*, 104 Wis., 160; 80 N. W., 454.

⁶⁷³ *Hochheimer on Custody of Infants*, sec. 54; *People v. Turner*, 55 Ill., 280; *People v. Park*, 41 N. Y., 21, 33.

Chapter XXXI. Libel And Slander

377. *Confidential, Tribunal, Malice.*—The rule is that all confidential statements made to an officer or a tribunal of the church concerning a member in the course of church discipline and for the good of the church, if not made with malice, are privileged, and no action for libel or slander can be maintained therefor.⁶⁷⁴

378. *Member, Officer, Councils.*—But slanderous or libelous statements made concerning a person not a member of the church or made concerning a member of the church to another member who is not either an officer or in the councils of the church, are actionable and the person making or publishing such statements is liable for damages. Also, a person who repeats a libel or slander may be liable as though he were the originator.⁶⁷⁵

[204]

379. *Official Communication, Privileged.*—An official communication between authorities of the church or an authority and a member of the church concerning a church matter or church members and not made in malice, is privileged.⁶⁷⁶

380. *Priest, Pastoral Duties.*—Where a priest published from the altar that “Peter Servatius is excommunicated, because he laid hands on the priest to put him out of the church, and he has no more benefit of the prayers of the church. I will not pray for him, and consider him a lost sheep and withdraw all my pastoral

⁶⁷⁴ Kleizer v. Symes, 40 Ind., 562; Etchison v. Pergeson, 88 Ga., 620; 15 S. E., 680; Lucas v. Case, 72 (9 Bush) Ky., 297; York v. Pease, 68 Mass., 288; Piper v. Woolman, 43 Neb., 280; 61 N. W., 588; O'Donahue v. McGovern, 23 Wendell, N. Y., 26; Servatius v. Pichel, 34 Wis., 292.

⁶⁷⁵ Combes v. Rose, 8 Blackf., 155; Servatius v. Pichel, 34 Wis., 292; Etchison v. Pergeson, 88 Ga., 620; 15 S. E., 680.

⁶⁷⁶ Gardener v. Anderson, Fed. Case, 5220; Rector v. Smith, 11 Ia., 302.

blessings from him. If he die, the burial rights of the church will be denied him," such remarks were held defamatory, unless they were spoken in the proper discharge of the priest's clerical and pastoral duties and without malice; and the case should have been submitted on the evidence to a jury.⁶⁷⁷

381. Church Record, Excommunication.—An entry of a church record that "A report raised and circulated by A. B. against Brother C., stating that he made him pay a note twice, and proved by A. B. as false," is libelous.⁶⁷⁸ But an entry of excommunication of a member made in the record and shown to other members, is not libelous, the latter being properly a part of the record and the former extraneous.⁶⁷⁹ [205]

382. Will, Libel, Action.—The will of a priest contained a statement that a relative had received \$300 from him for clothing, maintenance, education, etc., and promised to repay it, but paid no part of it. Then testator bequeathed said \$300 to two legatees to collect for their own use. The relative filed a petition asking the estate of the priest to be held liable for a libel in the sum of \$50,000 and the court held that as the right of action did not accrue until after the death of the testator, there was a right of action against the estate. As the case never got beyond the probate court, its authority is doubtful.⁶⁸⁰

383. Language, Insane, Good Faith.—Unless the language is used by the bishop in the line of his duty, a statement that a priest is irresponsible and insane, that he was removed from his position of priest for good reason, and that he has been guilty of ecclesiastical disobedience, is slanderous *per se*. To make a communication between a bishop and priest privileged it must have been spoken in good faith and in belief that the speaking of [206]

⁶⁷⁷ See "Excommunication," ante. *Servatius v. Pichel*, 34 Wis., 292; 11 L. R. A., 592.

⁶⁷⁸ *Shelton v. Nause*, 46 Ky., 128.

⁶⁷⁹ *Fawcett v. Charles*, 13 Wendell, 473.

⁶⁸⁰ 54 Cen. L. J., 313.

it came within the discharge of the bishop's duty.⁶⁸¹

384. Rector, Bigamy, Tobacco, Liquor.—In a case where the rector of an Episcopal church called upon a man charged with bigamy and after a private conversation the minister wrote a letter to the district attorney on behalf of the prisoner, it was held not privileged because it was not made in confidence of the relation and was not kept as a secret.⁶⁸² A letter from a church member of one congregation to the elders of another congregation advising them of the unfitness of a clergyman appointed to the latter parish, and stating that he used tobacco and liquor, that he was an untruthful man, and that his family was no credit to the community, was quasi-privileged; and in the absence of proof that the charges were false and malicious was not actionable.⁶⁸³

385. Newspapers, Criticisms, Priest.—A newspaper has a right to publish criticisms of the conduct of a priest in certain services held in his church if no false statement of facts is given, since such conduct is a proper subject of discussion; and if such article contains a statement that if certain published accounts of the conduct of the priest are true he acted in an improper manner, etc., it is not libelous because such facts are not true, as it is not an affirmation of the truth thereof. Where the alleged libel was published in a foreign language and the correctness of the translation was disputed, it was an error for the judge to instruct the jury that if the translation introduced in evidence was correct, the defendant was liable, since plaintiff's right to recover should not be made to depend on the absolute accuracy of the translation.⁶⁸⁴

386. Clergyman, Discipline, Tribunals, Testimony, Argument.—What a clergyman says in the administration of the discipline of the church or what is said in tribunals to enforce

⁶⁸¹ Hellstern v. Katzer, 103 Wis., 391; 79 N. W., 429.

⁶⁸² Hills v. State, 61 Neb., 589; 85 N. W., 836.

⁶⁸³ Konkle v. Haven, 140 Mich., 472; 103 N. W., 850.

⁶⁸⁴ Klos v. Zahorik, 113 Ia., 161; 84 N. W., 1046.

discipline of the church, including testimony and legitimate argument within the scope of the case, if said in good faith and without malice, is not actionable in the civil courts.⁶⁸⁵

387. *Physical Discipline, Imprisonment, Courts.*—A clergyman who claims to have been slandered by a parishioner can not administer physical discipline nor put the offender under restraint without leaving himself liable for damages for assault and battery or false imprisonment. If the clergyman desires to treat the charge as a church matter, he must go into the church tribunal; otherwise, his proper course is to bring an action for slander in the State court.⁶⁸⁶ [208]

388. *Sermon, False Statement, Crime.*—A clergyman may, by words used in a sermon, slander a member of his congregation. However, if he makes no false statement and does not falsely or maliciously charge a crime, what he says in the way of discipline is privileged.⁶⁸⁷ The meaning of the words “she is a dirty, vile woman,” can not be extended by innuendo.⁶⁸⁸

389. *Charges, Robbed, Hypocrite.*—Charges that a person has robbed a church or has stolen from a church, are actionable.⁶⁸⁹ Also, charging a person with being a hypocrite and using the cloak of religion for unworthy purposes, is slanderous.⁶⁹⁰ [209]

390. *Investigation, Probable Cause.*—When a member of a church consents to an investigation on complaint before a person who is not a member, if the complaint was made on probable cause and not under the pretence of exposing the defendant to scorn or obloquy, he could not subsequently bring an action for

⁶⁸⁵ Libel and Slander, Townsend, secs. 233, 234; 25 Cyc, 390, 398, 411.

⁶⁸⁶ Grace v. Dempsey, 75 Wis., 313; 43 N. W., 1127; Grace v. McArthur, 76 Wis., 641; 45 N. W., 518.

⁶⁸⁷ 25 Cyc, 390, 398.

⁶⁸⁸ 62 Cen. L. J., 180.

⁶⁸⁹ Libel and Slander, Townsend, p. 182 (notes).

⁶⁹⁰ Libel and Slander, Townsend, sec. 177; 25 Cyc, 398; Edwards v. Bell, 8 Moore, 467.

libel.⁶⁹¹

391. *Sacraments.*—To publish of a person that he has been deprived of the sacraments of the church to which he belongs, is libelous.⁶⁹²

392. *Obituary, Tolling Bell.*—To falsely and maliciously publish an obituary notice of a person living, is good ground for an action for libel.⁶⁹³ However, a complaint that a church tolled its bell to announce the death of a member, and did report him dead when he was actually living, and that it was all done for the purpose of annoying, harassing, and vexing the person and his family, was held not sufficient to support an action for libel. The latter case is doubtful law.⁶⁹⁴

[210]

393. *Newspaper, Profane Swearer.*—A newspaper in a notice of the death of a church member has the right to state that he was a profane swearer, if such was the case.⁶⁹⁵

394. *Business or Property, Special Damages.*—A company incorporated for the purpose of transacting business which would include hospitals, schools, and industrial institutions, may maintain an action for libel the same as an individual for any words affecting its business or property, if special damages are alleged and proved.⁶⁹⁶

395. *Justification, Repeating.*—It is no justification that libelous matter had been previously published by a third person, that the name of such person was disclosed at the time of repeating the libel, and that the person who was repeating it believed all the statements in the libel to be true.⁶⁹⁷

⁶⁹¹ Remington v. Congdon, 2 Pickering, 315; Bradley v. Heath, 12 Pickering, 163.

⁶⁹² McConckle v. Binns, 5 Binns, Pa., 340.

⁶⁹³ MacBride v. Allis, 9 Rich., S. C., 313.

⁶⁹⁴ State v. Riggs, 22 Vt., 322.

⁶⁹⁵ Commonwealth v. Batchelder, Thach., Mass., Cr. Cas., 191.

⁶⁹⁶ Shoe & L. v. Thompson, 18 Abbot's Pr., N. Y., 413.

⁶⁹⁷ Sans v. Joerris, 14 Wis., 663.

[211]

Chapter XXXII. Crimes

396. *Sins, Crimes, Discipline.*—Crimes are offenses against the civil law. The fact that the church organization may try and punish a member for sinning, or acquit him, has nothing whatever to do with the administration of the criminal law of the State. Therefore, a member may be arrested and tried for any offense before or after the ecclesiastical tribunal has taken action in the matter. But there are certain crimes of a religious nature of which the civil law assumes jurisdiction and punishes, such as blasphemy,⁶⁹⁸ disturbing religious meetings,⁶⁹⁹ etc. Most of those laws are statutory and depend wholly upon the statute of the State where the crime is committed.

397. *Profane Language, Smoking, Disturbance.*—Rude behavior or profane language if audible,⁷⁰⁰ smoking in the church or during services,⁷⁰¹ cracking and eating nuts in church,⁷⁰² and fighting near the church so as to disturb the services, are violations of the law.⁷⁰³ A father's taking his child out of the church with violence is a disturbance of the meeting.⁷⁰⁴ The disturbance of any member of the congregation assembled for religious worship is a violation of law.⁷⁰⁵ A sentence of \$100 fine or one year's imprisonment in the penitentiary, is not excessive or cruel or unusual punishment on conviction for disturbing a meeting.⁷⁰⁶

[212]

⁶⁹⁸ 5 Cyc, 715; "Disorderly Conduct," 14 Cyc, 467.

⁶⁹⁹ 14 Cyc, 540.

⁷⁰⁰ Williams v. State, 83 Ala., 78; 3 So., 616.

⁷⁰¹ Hull v. State, 120 Ind., 153; 22 N. E., 117.

⁷⁰² Hunt v. State, 3 Tex., 116.

⁷⁰³ State v. Kirby, 108 N. C., 772; 12 S. E., 1045.

⁷⁰⁴ Commonwealth v. Sigman, 2 Clark, Pa., 36.

⁷⁰⁵ State v. Wright, 41 Ark., 410; Tanner v. State, 126 Ga., 77; 54 S. E., 914.

⁷⁰⁶ State v. Shepherd, 54 S. C., 178; 32 S. E., 146; 14 Cyc, 467, 540.

398. *Sunday-School, Church.*—An ordinary Sunday-school where the Bible and religious precepts are taught, is a church within the law.⁷⁰⁷

399. *Private School.*—A person may be punished under the statute for wilfully disturbing a private school kept in a district schoolhouse for instruction in the art of writing.⁷⁰⁸

400. *Disturbing a Religious Meeting.*—Under a statute against disturbing a religious meeting, it has been held that it should [213] define what disturbance is punishable.⁷⁰⁹ Also, mere want of attention or observance of ceremonies, as standing or kneeling at times, is not a violation of the law.⁷¹⁰ Neither is singing out of time, unless done purposely,⁷¹¹ nor performing a proper duty, such as objecting to a silenced clergyman's conducting the services.⁷¹²

401. *Common Law, Offense, Statutory Law.*—If there is no statutory provision, in those States where the common law prevailed before the admission of the State to the Union the offense is punishable under the common law.⁷¹³ And even in States where there is a statutory law on the subject, a person may be convicted at common law.⁷¹⁴

402. *Services, Violation, Time.*—The nature of the services and the discipline of the denomination may determine whether there is a violation of the law. Usually the disturbance may occur at any place the congregation is assembled, and at any time when any part of the congregation is assembled for religious services or business.⁷¹⁵

[214]

⁷⁰⁷ Martin v. State, 65 Tenn., 234.

⁷⁰⁸ State v. Leighton, 35 Me., 195.

⁷⁰⁹ Marvin v. State, 19 Ind., 181.

⁷¹⁰ Brown v. State, 46 Ala., 175.

⁷¹¹ State v. Turkhaw, 69 N. C., 215.

⁷¹² Richardson v. State, 5 Tex. App., 470.

⁷¹³ U. S. v. Brooks, 4 Cranch, C. C., 427.

⁷¹⁴ People v. Crowley, 23 Hun., 412; McLane v. Mallock, 7 Ind., 525.

⁷¹⁵ Kinney v. State, 38 Ala., 224; State v. Lusk, 68 Ind., 264; State v. Edwards,

403. *Force, Priest, Preserve Order.*—A congregation may use sufficient force to remove a disturber.⁷¹⁶ A Catholic priest who is the conductor of religious services and master of ceremonies within his church has the right to preserve order and to remove by force, if necessary, any person who disturbs his services.⁷¹⁷

404. *Interrupt, Liquors, Traffic.*—There are statutes in most of the States making it a penal offense to interrupt or molest any assembly or meeting of the people for religious worship, or to sell intoxicating liquors or other articles of traffic within a certain distance of any camp-meeting or other religious assembly, except at a place of business regularly established prior to such meeting or assembly and not with intent of evading the provisions of the law.⁷¹⁸

405. *Theory, Blasphemy, Crime.*—On the theory that the United States is a Christian nation, blasphemy is held to be a crime.⁷¹⁹ Infidels naturally claim that it interferes with their rights. However, there is no more interference with the private rights of the infidel than there is with the private right of the Mormon who is forbidden to violate the laws of the country by having a plurality of wives; and it has been held that any words importing imprecation for divine vengeance may constitute profane cursing or blasphemy.⁷²⁰

406. *Religion, God, Ridicule, Virgin.*—Words vilifying the

32 Mo., 548; *Tanner v. State*, 126 Ga., 77; 54 S. E., 914.

⁷¹⁶ *MacLean v. Mallock*, 7 Ind., 525.

⁷¹⁷ *Wall v. Lee*, 34 N. Y., 141.

⁷¹⁸ *Meyer v. Baker*, 120 Ill., 567; 12 N. E., 79; *Commonwealth v. Bearse*, 132 Mass., 542; 42 Am. R., 450; *West v. State*, 28 Tenn., 66; *Cramer v. Marks*, 64 Pa. St., 151.

⁷¹⁹ 5 Cyc, 713; *Commonwealth v. Linn*, 158 Pa., 22; 27 At., 843; 22 L. R. A., 353.

⁷²⁰ *Gaines v. State*, 75 Tenn., 410; *Holcombe v. Cornish*, 8 Conn., 375; *Bodenheimer v. State*, 60 Ark., 10; 28 S. W., 507.

Christian religion,⁷²¹ denying God or the final judgment,⁷²² and profane ridicule of the Holy Scriptures or of Christ,⁷²³ are usually punishable. Also, the use of vile words applied to the Virgin Mary is blasphemy.⁷²⁴

407. Profanity, Proof, Excuse.—The profanity must be in the hearing of some person.⁷²⁵ Every time a person profanely swears by taking the name of God in vain is a separate offense.⁷²⁶ The prisoner's confession is sufficient proof; otherwise the prosecution must show that the offense was committed and some one heard the words.

[216]

Drunkenness is no excuse.⁷²⁷ Punishment by fine or imprisonment is not in violation of the constitution of the State or of the United States.⁷²⁸

408. Sunday, Business, Fishing.—The offenses against the Sunday law are so numerous that it would be almost impossible to review them within the limits of this work. Of course, the carrying on of a man's ordinary business is a violation of the Sabbath laws. But in some States selling cigars,⁷²⁹ a butcher selling meat,⁷³⁰ and even selling soda water,⁷³¹ and ice cream,⁷³² as well as fishing, traveling, driving, using a slot machine,⁷³³ and almost every other imaginable act excepting going to church, has at some time and in some State been declared a violation of the

⁷²¹ State v. Chandler, 2 Har., Del., 553.

⁷²² Commonwealth v. Kneeland, 37 Mass. (20 Pick), 206.

⁷²³ People v. Ruggles, 8 Johnson, 225.

⁷²⁴ State v. Chandler, 2 Harr., Del., 553.

⁷²⁵ State v. Pepper, 68 N. C., 259.

⁷²⁶ Odell v. Garnett, 4 Blackf., Ind., 549.

⁷²⁷ People v. Porter, 2 Park, N. Y. Cr., 14.

⁷²⁸ State v. Chandler, 2 Harr., Del., 553; Commonwealth v. Kneeland, Thach., Mass. Cr. Cas., 346.

⁷²⁹ Miller v. State, 76 Ind., 310.

⁷³⁰ Petty v. State, 58 Ark., 1; 22 S. W., 654.

⁷³¹ Splane v. Commonwealth, 12 At., Pa., 431.

⁷³² Commonwealth v. Keiten, 1 Monag., 368.

⁷³³ Cain v. Daly, 74 S. C, 480; 55 S. E., 110.

law, and a penalty imposed therefor.

[217] In California,⁷³⁴ Tennessee,⁷³⁵ and Washington,⁷³⁶ men may be shaved on Sunday. In some other States it has been held that running a barber shop on Sunday is a violation of the law.⁷³⁷

409. *Charity, Necessity, Benefit, Pleasure.*—However, doing works of charity and works of necessity usually are exempt. What is a work of necessity is a question of law. Charity includes whatever proceeds from the sense of moral duty or a feeling of kindness and humanity, and is intended wholly for the purpose of the relief or comfort of another, and not for one's benefit or pleasure.⁷³⁸

[218] **410. *Contracts, Marriage, Notice.***—The common law made no distinction between Sunday and any other day as to making contracts, but it prohibited holding court. In this country the statutory law invariably prohibits any but works of necessity or charity to be done on Sunday. But marriage settlements,⁷³⁹ publication of statutory notices on Sunday,⁷⁴⁰ and promises to marry, have been held legal.⁷⁴¹

411. *Funeral, Physician, Subscriptions.*—To attend a funeral, to employ an undertaker, or a physician, on Sunday, has been tested in the courts, and finally decided to be works of necessity or charity and not a violation of the Sunday law. Also, subscriptions made for church purposes and in works of charity on Sunday have been held legal and binding.⁷⁴²

⁷³⁴ Ex parte Jentsch, 112 Cal., 468; 44 Pac., 803.

⁷³⁵ State v. Lorey, 66 Tenn., 95.

⁷³⁶ State v. Krech, 10 Wash., 166; 38 Pac., 1001.

⁷³⁷ People v. Havenor, 149 N. Y., 195; 43 N. E., 541; 3 L. R. A., 689; State v. Dolan, 13 Idaho, 693; 92 Pac., 995; 14 L. R. A., N. S., 1259.

⁷³⁸ Flag v. Inhabitants, 58 Mass., 243; Doyle v. Lynn, 118 Mass., 195.

⁷³⁹ Hayden v. Mitchell, 103 Ga., 431; 30 S. E., 287.

⁷⁴⁰ Roth v. Hacks, 68 Mo. App., 283.

⁷⁴¹ Hofer v. Cowan, 55 Cen. L. J., 290.

⁷⁴² Byrant v. Watson, 127 Ind., 42; 26 N. E., 687; Allen v. Duffy, 43 Mich., 1; 4 N. W., 427; 11 L. R. A., 63; Dale v. Knapp, 98 Pa., 389.

412. *Jews, Seventh-Day Observers.*—In several of the States it has been held that Jews and Seventh-Day observers of the Sabbath must obey the Sunday law.⁷⁴³ However, in many States there is a statute expressly exempting people who keep the seventh day of the week; but still they sometimes have a provision, unless “he shall wilfully disturb thereby some other person or some religious assembly on said day.”

413. *Societies, Secular Work.*—Business meetings of benevolent and church societies for benevolent or church work may be held on Sunday. Even the constitution of such societies may be amended on Sunday. However, secular work that does not come strictly under the functions of such societies would be unlawful.⁷⁴⁴ [219]

414. *Sunday, Begins, Ends.*—Usually people believe they know what the word Sunday means, when it begins, and when it ends. Christianity usually recognizes the time from midnight to midnight as Sunday, and that is the usual time recognized by law.⁷⁴⁵ But the solar day only,⁷⁴⁶ or from midnight to sunset,⁷⁴⁷ give us a variety which may not be complete. Also, we have the further anomaly of a note made at 2 o'clock on Saturday night, being held valid.⁷⁴⁸

415. *Religious Liberty, Law.*—The constitutional guarantee of religious liberty is not violated by enforcing the Sunday law.⁷⁴⁹

416. *Necessaries, Doctor.*—As a parent or husband is obliged to furnish necessaries for his children and wife, when medical treatment becomes necessary, he is liable for manslaughter for failure to do his duty, even in case of religious disbelief in the

⁷⁴³ *Society v. Commonwealth*, 52 Pa., 125; *Parker v. State*, 84 Tenn., 476.

⁷⁴⁴ *McCabe v. Father Matthews*, 24 Hun., 149; *People v. Young*, 67 Barb., 357.

⁷⁴⁵ *Philadelphia v. Lehman*, 56 Md., 209; *Kroer v. People*, 78 Ill., 294.

⁷⁴⁶ *Fox v. Abel*, 2 Conn., 541.

⁷⁴⁷ *Bryant v. Inhabitants*, 30 Me., 193; *Tracy v. Jenks*, 32 Mass., 465.

⁷⁴⁸ *Carpenter v. Crane*, 1 Root, Conn., 98.

⁷⁴⁹ *Judefinde v. State*, 78 Md., 510; 28 At., 405; 22 L. R. A., 721, note.

[220]

efficacy of medicine. Courts are not inclined to make any distinction as to religious belief, and the prevailing rule in this country is that the parent is liable if he negligently allows his child to die when it might have been saved by the services of a doctor.⁷⁵⁰

417. *Christian Healer, Consent.*—A Christian healer can not be held liable except under a State law. One who consents to treatment has no action for damages unless there is a failure to exercise the care and skill of a Christian Scientist. This rule might not apply to one incompetent to consent to a contract.⁷⁵¹

418. *Politics.*—A minister who had been expelled by his congregation for voting the Democratic ticket, had some of the members of the church arrested under the election laws for intimidating a voter. The court held that as he “suffered no pecuniary loss, personal injury, or physical restraint,” no crime was committed.⁷⁵²

[221]

419. *Mail, Obscene Language.*—Under the United States postal laws against sending “obscene, lewd or lascivious” books or papers through the mail, a person can not be convicted without proof that the matter is obscene, lewd, and lascivious, as the word “or” should be construed to mean “and.” Also, the court held that a newspaper article on the doctrine of the Immaculate Conception written in coarse and obscene language that offended the religious sentiments of the people, but had no tendency to induce sexual immorality, did not render the newspaper unmailable nor the publisher guilty under the United States statutes. The court says: “Those parts of the article most relied upon to sustain the charge, though ostensibly a discussion of a religious subject, are couched in language not quite suitable for insertion in a judicial opinion, however well adjusted to such applause as might be expected

⁷⁵⁰ 55 Cen. L. J., 44; 56 Cen. L. J., 261; State v. Cheneworth, 163 Ind., 94; 71 N. E., 197; 59 Cen. L. J., 202.

⁷⁵¹ Speed v. Tomlinson, 73 N. H., 46; 59 At., 376; 68 L. R. A., 432.

⁷⁵² State v. Rodgers, 128 N. C., 576; 38 S. E., 34.

from taste of a certain degree of degradation.”⁷⁵³

420. “*Fair, ” Chances, Gambling.*—A church “fair” at which chances are sold, drawings had, or any game of chance permitted, is illegal and may be punished as gambling.⁷⁵⁴

[222]

⁷⁵³ U. S. v. Moore, 104 Fed., 78.

⁷⁵⁴ Constant v. Rector, 4 Daly, 1.

Chapter XXXIII. Cemeteries

421. *Statutes, Land.*—There are sufficient statutory provisions on cemeteries to make a large book, and the frequent changes made in such laws render a full statement of the law impossible. The statutes against locating cemeteries near cities, dwellings, etc., should be carefully examined before buying land therefor.⁷⁵⁵

422. *United States, Jurisdiction.*—The jurisdiction over the United States cemeteries is in the State where the cemeteries are located unless such jurisdiction has been ceded to the United States.⁷⁵⁶

423.. *Tombstones, Soldiers.*—The United States will erect tombstones at the graves of soldiers who served in the Civil War, in all cemeteries where their graves are unmarked. Wherever the United States has jurisdiction over cemeteries, it has made it a criminal offense punishable by fine or imprisonment to deface a tombstone.⁷⁵⁷

[223]

424. *Indigent Soldiers, Tombstones.*—Most of the States have statutes providing for the burial of indigent soldiers and for putting tombstones at their graves. The attention of relatives of deceased soldiers should be called to it.

425. *State Authority.*—The State Legislature has authority to control cemeteries or delegate that authority to some one else, and afterward to transfer it to a different person.⁷⁵⁸

⁷⁵⁵ Frederickson v. W. R. Cem. Ass., 133 Wis., 502; 113 N. W., 1023.

⁷⁵⁶ 14 Op. Atty-Gen., 27; secs. 4780-4782, U. S. Statutes; 16 Op. Atty-Gen., 13.

⁷⁵⁷ 20 St. at L., 281.

⁷⁵⁸ Sohier v. Trinity Ch., 109 Mass., 1; City v. Town, 82 Wis., 374; 52 N. W., 425.

426. *Maryland, Two Acres.*—Although the declaration of rights of the State of Maryland restricted the sale of lands for a cemetery for a church to two acres, the Legislature has power to grant leave to a cemetery association to take title to more land. And where the trustees bought twelve acres of land for a burial ground and a subsequent act of the Legislature authorized the enlargement of the cemetery not to exceed twenty-five acres, the title to the excess of the valid purchase was ratified and the title vested in the trustees.⁷⁵⁹

427. *Consent, Application.*—Where a statute provides that no cemetery shall be laid out without first obtaining the consent of the municipal authorities thereto, a written communication [224] signed by the officers of an incorporated society is sufficient application; and a motion granting consent adopted by the city council is sufficient action on its part to comply with the statute.⁷⁶⁰

428. *Charter, Ground, Members.*—An application for a charter to incorporate a cemetery need not specifically locate the ground.⁷⁶¹ The charter or the articles of incorporation, or by-laws made under them, generally determines who shall be members of the corporation. And where every owner of a lot signing the constitution and by-laws becomes a member, the trustees can not vote on the unsold lots.⁷⁶²

429. *Police Power, Trespass, Burial.*—Under our laws the State, by reason of its police power, has control over the cemeteries within it. However, that power has generally been very favorably exercised. Laws both civil and criminal have been enacted to protect cemeteries from invasion and trespass

⁷⁵⁹ Trustees v. Manning, 72 Md., 116; 19 At., 599.

⁷⁶⁰ Porch v. St. Bridget's, 81 Wis., 599; 51 N. W., 1007.

⁷⁶¹ In re Highland, 4 Pa. Dist. Rep., 653.

⁷⁶² Commonwealth v. Fisher, 7 Phil., 264; Bourland v. Springdale, 158 Ill., 458; 42 N. E., 86.

[225]

and to protect tombstones from injury.⁷⁶³ When authorized by the Legislature a city may make a by-law prohibiting burial within its limits, notwithstanding that the cemetery has been constantly used for over one hundred years.⁷⁶⁴ Also, the city has authority to protect and regulate the use of a cemetery.⁷⁶⁵

430. *Dwelling, Limits.*—Most of the States provide that no cemetery shall be laid out within a certain limit of a dwelling. But after the cemetery is established a man can not have it moved when he puts up a dwelling within the limits or where he consented to the cemetery at the time it was established.⁷⁶⁶

[226]

431. *Well, Pollution.*—And where a man had built a dwelling near a cemetery, it was not good ground for him to prevent the enlargement of the cemetery by showing that it might destroy his well. The court questions whether there is any legal ground for complaint for the pollution of subterranean waters when caused by the proper use without negligence of the adjacent premises.⁷⁶⁷ Additional lands may be obtained under the law of eminent domain by condemnation.⁷⁶⁸

432. *Exempt, Execution, Mortgage.*—The statutes in most of the States exempt the tombstones and lots in a cemetery from sale on execution.⁷⁶⁹ Also, a cemetery lot can not be sold under mortgage after bodies have been buried therein, as any one may be arrested for desecration of graves.⁷⁷⁰

⁷⁶³ *City v. Watson*, 56 N. J. L., 667; 24 L. R. A., 843; 49 Cen. L. J., 307.

⁷⁶⁴ *Coates v. City*, 7 Cowan, N. Y., 585; *Humphrey v. Frost*, 109 N. C., 132; 13 S. E., 793; *City v. Austin*, 87 Tex., 330; 28 S. W., 528; 47 Am. St. R., 114.

⁷⁶⁵ *Stockton v. City*, 42 N. J. Eq., 531; 9 At., 203; *First v. Meyers*, 5 Okla., 819; 50 Pac., 70; 38 L. R. A., 329.

⁷⁶⁶ *Steams v. Manchester*, 63 N. H., 390; *Henry v. Trustees*, 48 Ohio, 671; 30 N. E., 1122.

⁷⁶⁷ *Upjohn v. Board*, 46 Mich., 542; 9 N. W., 845.

⁷⁶⁸ *Edwards v. Stonington*, 20 Conn., 466.

⁷⁶⁹ *Oakland v. People*, 93 Tex., 569; 57 S. W., 27; 55 L. R. A., 503.

⁷⁷⁰ *Louisville v. Nevin*, 73 Ky., 549; *First v. Hazel*, 63 Neb., 844; 89 N. W., 378.

433. *Public, Regulation.*—The right to bury in a public cemetery is a privilege or license that is subject to municipal regulation, and revocable whenever the public necessity requires it.⁷⁷¹

434. *Nuisance, Public Health, Disease.*—A cemetery is not a nuisance *per se*, but if it is proved that the burial of dead bodies in a certain cemetery does injure the public health and is a fruitful source of transmission of disease, the State may prohibit such burial at certain places within cities or adjacent to dwellings. But unless authorized by the Legislature a council has no right by ordinance to provide that no one shall be buried within half a mile of any habitation or public thoroughfare.⁷⁷² And where the Legislature authorized a city to remove the bodies interred and allow streets through the land, it had authority to do so.⁷⁷³ [227]

435. *Devise, Easement, Rules.*—The general rule of law is that a man can not devise away a cemetery lot in which members of his family are buried. He owns only a license or at the most an easement which is subject to the rules of the cemetery association and the police power of the State. However, there are some exceptions.⁷⁷⁴

436. *Conditions.*—A condition in a deed that the lot can not be sold, assigned, or transferred without consent of the cemetery corporation, is as good and binding as in any other conveyance of real estate.⁷⁷⁵

437. *Inherits, Right.*—Where a son inherits from his father the right to burial in a cemetery lot, he has the right to remove

⁷⁷¹ Page v. Simons, 63 N. H., 17.

⁷⁷² Wygant v. McLaughlin, 39 Or., 429; 64 Pac., 867; 54 L. R. A., 636; 53 Cen. L. J., 48.

⁷⁷³ Trustees v. Manning, 72 Md., 116; 19 At., 599; Close v. Glenwood, 107 U. S., 466; 2 Sup. Ct. R., 267; 27 L. Ed., 408; Matter of Bd. of Street Opening, 133 N. Y., 329; 31 N. E., 102; 28 Am. St. R., 640; 16 L. R. A., 180.

⁷⁷⁴ In re Waldron, 26 R. I., 84; 58 At., 453; 67 L. R. A., 118; Wright v. Hollywood, 112 Ga., 884; 38 S. E., 94; 52 L. R. A., 621.

⁷⁷⁵ Perkins v. Mass., 138 Mass., 361.

[228]

and inter therein the bodies of his grandmother and sister who had been buried elsewhere.⁷⁷⁶

438. Certificate.—A certificate was issued for the burial of Dennis Coppers in the following form:

“Office of Calvary Cemetery,
New York, December 1, 1873.

RECEIVED from Mr. Dennis Coppers, seventy-five dollars,
being the amount of purchase money of a plot of ground 8
feet by 8 feet, in Calvary Cemetery.

D. BRENNAN,
Superintendent of Calvary Cemetery.

4 Graves, 5, 6, 7, 8, Plot D, Section 7, Range 35.”

[229]

439. Freemason, Title, Right.—Prior to 1879, the mother, wife, and other relatives of Coppers, who were Roman Catholics, were buried in the lot covered by the deed given in the last paragraph. Coppers, who was a Freemason, died in August, 1879, and his funeral services were held under the auspices of the Masons from an Episcopal church, as directed in his will. The rules and doctrines of the Church forbid the burial in consecrated ground of the body of one who was not a Roman Catholic or who was a member of the Masonic fraternity. The Church authorities refused to allow Coppers to be buried in the cemetery, and application was made by his relatives for a writ of mandamus to compel his interment therein, they having deposited the necessary money to pay all the expenses. The court held that the certificate delivered to Coppers was not a conveyance nor a grant and did not vest title to the land in him, and that the cemetery could not be compelled to execute and deliver to him an absolute conveyance of the lot. His only right under the certificate was the use of the lot for burial purposes subject to and in conformity with the established rules and by-laws of the

⁷⁷⁶ Wright v. Hollywood, 112 Ga., 884; 38 S. E., 94.

corporation in so far as they were not in violation of any law. It is the tacit understanding, when a person applies for a burial lot in a cemetery of the Catholic Church, that he is either a Catholic and as such is eligible to be buried therein, or that he applies in behalf of those who are in communion with the Church.⁷⁷⁷

440. *Lots, Fee.*—If the cemetery association sells 400 lots to one man and makes a conveyance in fee thereof, it is bound thereby.⁷⁷⁸

441. *Deed, Privilege, Heirs and Assigns.*—No formal deed is necessary to confer exclusive right to the use of a cemetery lot for burial purposes.⁷⁷⁹ And certificates of lots issued by a corporation convey no title to the land, as they are not in the form necessary to constitute a conveyance of land. Their only effect is to grant the privilege of interment so long as the ground continues to be used for the purposes of burial.⁷⁸⁰ A deed of a cemetery lot “to him, his heirs, and assigns forever,” gives only an easement in the freehold, and does not give title to the soil, and is subject to changes made necessary by altered circumstances.⁷⁸¹ [230]

442. *Access, Purposes.*—Title to a cemetery lot gives the right of access to it for the usual purposes, including putting up monuments.⁷⁸²

443. *Monuments, Inscriptions, Drunkenness, Non-Baptized, Strangers.*—The plaintiff obtained from the defendant a deed, which, among other things, contained the following conditions: “that such lot shall not be transferred without the consent of the trustees; shall be subject to the regulations made, or to be made, in the care and management of such cemetery by the

⁷⁷⁷ *People v. Trustees*, 21 Hun., 184; *McGuire v. St. Pat. C. C.*, 3 N. Y. Sup., 781; *Baltimore v. Manning*, 72 Md., 116; 19 At., 599.

⁷⁷⁸ *Palmer v. Cypress*, 122 N. Y., 429; 25 N. E., 983.

⁷⁷⁹ *Conger v. Weyant*, 55 Hun., 605.

⁷⁸⁰ *Baltimore v. Manning*, 72 Md., 116; 19 At., 599.

⁷⁸¹ *Went v. Methodist*, 80 Hun., 266; *Adams v. First*, 148 Mich., 140; 111 N. W., 757; 11 L. R. A., N. S., 509.

⁷⁸² *Lakin v. Ames*, 64 Mass., 198.

[231]

trustees, who shall also have the right to prevent the erection of offensive and improper monuments or inscriptions thereon, and shall retain the right to enter any lot for the removal of anything objectionable; that no remains shall be deposited therein for hire; and that persons dying in drunkenness, duel, or by self-destruction, non-baptized, non-Catholic, or otherwise opposed to the Catholic Church, shall not be therein interred.” The plaintiff had buried his father and one of his children in the lot, and brought his wife's remains there for burial. Upon the arrival of the funeral, two small coffins of strangers, one of which bore the name “John McDonald,” which the grave-digger had taken up, were at the side of the grave. There was nothing to show how those bodies came to be buried there. The plaintiff brought suit for damages against the cemetery association. The court held that the cemetery association was liable and that the defense that it was a public charitable organization could not be sustained.⁷⁸³

444. *Use, Forfeited.*—When a deed is made of land for the use of a cemetery only, it will be forfeited by using it for a school.⁷⁸⁴

[232]

445. *By-Laws, Member, Burial.*—Where a by-law of a church association provides that any member who pays one dollar to have his name entered in the record shall be entitled to a burial lot, a member who had paid one dollar to the committee of the church before the adoption of such by-law but had ceased to be a member of the congregation, has no right to a burial lot.⁷⁸⁵

446. *Adverse Possession.*—If the original title to a cemetery is defective, the title may become good by adverse possession.⁷⁸⁶

447. *Improvements.*—The owner of a lot, unless some rule of the cemetery association or law of the State is to the contrary, may improve it as he sees fit so long as he does not injure the

⁷⁸³ Donnelly v. Boston, 146 Mass., 163; 15 N. E., 505.

⁷⁸⁴ Rawson v. School, 89 Mass., 299.

⁷⁸⁵ St. Johns v. Haans, 31 Pa. St., 9.

⁷⁸⁶ Dangerfield v. Williams, 26 App., S. C., 508.

property rights of another.⁷⁸⁷

448. *Trespass, Injunction.*—An action for damages *quara clausum fregit*, can be maintained by a relative against any one who trespasses upon a grave of a person lawfully interred.⁷⁸⁸ Also, a relative may enjoin by suit in equity, on behalf of himself and others equally interested, interference with graves in his cemetery lot.⁷⁸⁹

[233]

449. *Roads, Alleys.*—Most of the laws relating to highways apply to cemetery roads and alleys, excepting that when a road or alley in a cemetery is vacated the land reverts to the cemetery instead of becoming parts of the adjoining lots.⁷⁹⁰ In most of the States a road can not be laid out through or take a part of a cemetery.⁷⁹¹ But a public highway may be established through a cemetery by user, the same as over other lands.⁷⁹²

450. *Abandoned, Bodies.*—When a cemetery has been abandoned, those who have relatives buried there may incorporate it for preservation.⁷⁹³ Also, a corporation may change its cemetery and remove the bodies interred therein.⁷⁹⁴

451. *Two-Family Lot, Control.*—Where a lot is owned jointly by two families, one burying in the north half and the other in the south half, the family burying in the north half can not prevent the burial of a member of the other family in the south half, if

[234]

⁷⁸⁷ *Silverwood v. Latrobe*, 68 Md., 620; 13 At., 161.

⁷⁸⁸ *Bessimer v. Jenkins*, 111 Ala., 135; 18 So., 565; 66 Am. St. R., 26.

⁷⁸⁹ *Davidson v. Reed*, 111 Ill., 167; 53 Am. R., 613; *Boyce v. Kalbough*, 47 Md., 334.

⁷⁹⁰ *Burke v. Wall*, 29 La. Ann., 38; *Seymour v. Page*, 33 Conn., 61; *Perkins v. Mass.*, 138 Mass., 361.

⁷⁹¹ *Hyde Park v. Oakwoods*, 119 Ill., 141; 7 N. E., 627; *Matter of Bd. of Street Opening*, 133 N.Y., 329; 31 N. E., 102; 28 Am. St. E., 640 L. R. A., 180.

⁷⁹² *Eastern v. City of Louisville*, 13 Ky. L. Rep., 279; 15 S. W., 1117.

⁷⁹³ *Burke v. Wall*, 29 La. Ann., 38; *Appeal of Gumbert*, 110 Pa. St., 496; 1 At, 437.

⁷⁹⁴ *In re Reformed*, 7 Howard's Pr., 476; *Scoville v. MacMahon*, 62 Conn., 378; 26 At., 479.

entitled to be buried in that cemetery.⁷⁹⁵

452. *Burying Dogs, Removal.*—A person who has a lot in a cemetery has no right to bury any but human bodies therein, and one who has buried a pet dog in her lot may be compelled to remove it.⁷⁹⁶

453. *Stranger, Protest, Kin.*—One member of a family can not authorize the burial of a stranger in a family lot where his parents are buried and against the protest of any other relative of equal or nearer degree of kin.⁷⁹⁷ When an owner of a lot has consented to the burial of a body therein, he can not afterward remove the body or deface the tombstone, and to do so would be a criminal offense.⁷⁹⁸ When a lot is sold to one person, the cemetery association has the right to limit interments to members of the family owning the lot. However, where there is nothing concerning it in the laws or rules of the association, it might be different.⁷⁹⁹

454. *Association, Bishop, Stipulation, Certificate, License, Revocable.*—The Germans of Cincinnati formed an association and purchased ten acres of land for a cemetery “for German immigrants, their families, and relatives, of Cincinnati and its vicinity, who might be members of the Catholic Church and in accordance with the doctrine, discipline, usage, and ceremonies of the same.” They incorporated with fifteen trustees to be elected annually. Before he would bless the cemetery, the bishop required and the committee stipulated with him in writing the following: That the rules of the Catholic Church should always be faithfully observed in this chiefly: First, that no one should be buried in the ground who had not been baptized or who

[235]

⁷⁹⁵ Antrim v. Malsbury, 43 N.J. Eq., 288; 13 At., 180.

⁷⁹⁶ Hertle v. Riddell, Ky., 106 S. W., 282; 15 L. R. A., N. S., 796.

⁷⁹⁷ Lewis v. Walker, 165 Pa. St., 30; 30 At., 500.

⁷⁹⁸ State v. Wilson, 94 N. C., 1015.

⁷⁹⁹ Farelly v. Metairie, 42 La. Ann., 28; 10 So., 386; Commonwealth v. Maria, 2 Weekly Notes Cases, 244.

died out of communion of the Catholic Church, to which the bishop or in his absence the clergy of the German Catholic Church or churches, should be the judge; second, that no poor person should be denied a place therein because his parents were unwilling to pay; third, that any money accrued from the ground should be expended for pious uses and specifically for the relief of the German Catholic poor; fourth, that the remains of persons interred in Catharine Street burial-ground might be removed to the new ground. The bishop subsequently closed the cemetery as a place for burial of Catholics because the congregation had violated the stipulation: "First, by admitting those to burial who [236] died out of the communion of the Catholic Church; second, by refusing to poor persons the right of burial; third, by expending the funds of the association in other than pious uses and relief of the poor." The court held that the corporation had authority to determine that the cemetery should continue to be used as such, but the conditions might be enforced by any one interested.⁸⁰⁰ Also the question was brought before the court in a case where a man had fallen away from the Church, and the court held that the certificate was a mere license giving no property rights, and revocable; and that the question as to whether the party to be buried therein was in communion with the Church, was one over which the Church itself had exclusive jurisdiction.⁸⁰¹

455. Rules, Diocese.—One who buys the privilege of burying his dead in a cemetery acquires no general right of property, but only a right to use the grounds as a place of interment, and the rules governing a cemetery in force at the time the privilege is acquired measure the extent of the use. Where a rule of the church having charge of the cemetery forbids the burial of non-Catholics therein, the bishop of the diocese and the local [237] priest, who according to the usage of the church were vested with control, had authority and power to restrain a holder of a lot from

⁸⁰⁰ Hullman v. Honcomp, 5 Ohio St., 237.

⁸⁰¹ MacGuire v. St. Patrick's, 54 Hun., 207.

interring the body of his son who was not in communion with the church at the time of his death, and who committed suicide.⁸⁰²

456. *Negroes, Indians.*—The fact that a man is a negro, Indian, or other racial human being, is not good ground to prevent his burial in a cemetery.⁸⁰³

457. *Will, Body, Custody.*—Where no disposition of a body has been made by will, the surviving husband, or wife, or next of kin, has the right to the body for the purpose of burial. But the right of the surviving wife or husband, if they were living together at the time of the death of deceased, is paramount to that of the next of kin.⁸⁰⁴ A right to the custody of the body of a deceased relative and to decide upon the final place of burial where the deceased is unmarried, is in his next of kin, and this right will be protected by the courts.⁸⁰⁵

458. *Non-Residence, Burial.*—Non-residence does not divest a person of the right to burial with his relatives.⁸⁰⁶

459. *State, Vacate, Equity, Rule.*—The State may require the removal of the bodies and vacate a cemetery without compensation to lot owners in some extraordinary cases of eminent domain or as a health measure.⁸⁰⁷ Courts of equity exercise some discretion in cases that do not fall within this rule.⁸⁰⁸ But the superintendent of a cemetery has no right to

⁸⁰² *Dwenger v. Geary*, 113 Ind., 106; 14 N. E., 903; *Nance v. Busby*, 91 Tenn., 303; 15 L. R. A., 801.

⁸⁰³ *Mt. Maria v. Commonwealth*, 81 Pa. St., 235; 22 Am. Rep., 743; *Cemetery Co. v. Walker*, 29 Ky. L. R., 1252; 97 S. W., 34; 7 L. R. A., N. S., 155.

⁸⁰⁴ *Larson v. Chase*, 47 Minn., 307; 50 N. W., 238; 14 L. R. A., 85; 28 Am. St. R., 370; *Pettigrew v. P.*, 207 Pa., 313; 56 At., 878; 64 L. R. A., 179.

⁸⁰⁵ *McEntee v. Bonacum*, 66 Neb., 651; 92 N. W., 633; 66 L. R. A., 440.

⁸⁰⁶ *Hook v. Joyce*, 94 Ky., 450; 22 S. W., 651; 21 L. R. A., 96.

⁸⁰⁷ *Columbus v. C.*, 82 Wis., 334; 52 N. W., 425; 16 L. R. A., 695; *Mt. Hope v. Boston*, 158 Mass., 509; 33 N. E., 695; 35 Am. St. R., 515; *Kincaid's Appeal*, 66 Pa. St., 411; 5 Am. R., 377; *Bessimer v. Jenkins*, 111 Ala., 135; 56 Am. St. R., 26; 18 So., 565.

⁸⁰⁸ *Wilson v. Reed*, 68 At., 37, N. H.; *Wormley v. Wormley*, 207 Ill., 411; 60 N. E., 865; 3 L. R. A., N. S., 481.

remove a child without the consent of the father who owns the lot.⁸⁰⁹

460. *Consent, Bishop, Removal.*—With the consent of deceased's husband before the funeral, the father of deceased paid for the lot in which his daughter wished to be buried with her parents. Her mother being dissatisfied with the location, the lot was subsequently exchanged for another in the same cemetery; but after preliminary arrangements had been made, the son-in-law applied to a court of equity for a writ restraining the father and the bishop from removing the body. The bishop answered that he was willing to conform to any order of the court. The court held that by acceding to his wife's request and allowing her father to bury her in the first instance, and by standing mute while the arrangements for the removal of the body were being made, the husband had no right thereafter to prevent the removal of his wife's body.⁸¹⁰ [239]

461. *Court, Remove, Consent.*—In a proper case a court may grant a decree to remove the body of a relative from one cemetery to another.⁸¹¹ Otherwise no one has the right to exhume or remove a body without the consent of those having charge of the cemetery and of those having the right of burial, as consort or the next of kin. In some States the offense is a felony.⁸¹² In Nebraska, at least, those who have the legal right to bury a relative may remove his body from one Catholic cemetery to another without the consent of the bishop.⁸¹³ [240]

462. *Crime, Fraud, Exhume, Autopsy.*—In an action on an insurance policy where there is evidence of fraud, as death by poison, a court may order a body exhumed for examination,

⁸⁰⁹ Thirkfield v. Mountain, 12 Utah, 76; 41 Pac., 564; Wright v. Hollywood, 112 Ga., 884; 38 S. E., 94; 52 L. R. A., 621.

⁸¹⁰ Toppin v. Moriarty, 59 N. J. Eq., 115; 44 At., 469; 50 Cen. L. J., 21.

⁸¹¹ Cohen v. Cong., 99 N. Y. S., 732.

⁸¹² Feeley v. Andrews, 191 Mass., 313; 77 N. E., 766; State v. McLean, 121 N. C., 589; 28 S. E., 140; 42 L. R. A., 721.

⁸¹³ McEntee v. Bonacum, 66 Neb., 651; 92 N. W., 633; 66 L. R. A., 440.

although the person having the right to control the burial of the body is not a party to the suit.⁸¹⁴ Public officials have the right to disinter a body to ascertain whether a crime has been committed.⁸¹⁵ But without a coroner's inquest or consent of the surviving consort or next of kin, a doctor has no right to perform an autopsy.⁸¹⁶

463. *Tort, Corpse.*—The general rule is that an action of tort may be maintained by the widow or next of kin for the mutilation of a corpse or even for negligently exposing it to the elements.⁸¹⁷ In a few cases the right has been denied.⁸¹⁸

[241]

464. *Custodian, Burial, Mutilation.*—In the absence of a widow, a son is the lawful custodian of the body of his deceased father for preservation, representation, and burial, and may maintain an action for unlawful mutilation thereof. The sense of outrage and mental suffering resulting directly from the wilful mutilation of the body of a parent, is a proper independent element of compensatory damages.⁸¹⁹

465. *Property in a Corpse, Mummy, Executors.*—The question of property in a corpse has been generally denied. However, in case of a mummy which has become an object of curiosity, the case may be different. Where a testator ordered his body burned and the executor presented a bill for £321 for doing so, the court disallowed it on the ground that when a man is dead his next of kin or executors have the right to dispose of his body; but that as it is not property, a man has no right to bequeath it for a particular

⁸¹⁴ *Mutual, etc., v. Griesa*, 156 F., 398.

⁸¹⁵ *Hayes v. State*, 112 Wis., 304; 87 N. W., 1076.

⁸¹⁶ 14 L. R. A., 85; *Young v. College of Physicians*, 81 Md., 358; 32 At., 177; 31 L. R. A., 540; *Meyers v. Clarke*, 28 Ky. L., 1000; 90 S. W., 1049; 5 L. R. A., N. S., 727.

⁸¹⁷ *Lindh v. Ry.*, 99 Minn., 408; 109 N. W., 823; 7 L. R. A., N. S., 1018.

⁸¹⁸ *Long v. Ry.*, 15 Oklahoma, 512; 86 Pac., 289; 6 L. R. A., N. S., 883; *Griffith v. Charlotte*, 23 S. C., 25; 55 Am. Rep., 1.

⁸¹⁹ *Koerber v. Patek*, 123 Wis., 453; 102 N. W., 40; *Thompson v. State*, 105 Tenn., 177; 58 S. W., 213; 80 Am. St. R., 875; 51 L. R. A., 883.

purpose.⁸²⁰ Also, where a man was in jail and died during his imprisonment and the jailer refused to give up the body until the debt was paid, the court held that there was no property in the corpse, and therefore there could be no lien upon it and he must surrender it.⁸²¹

[242]

466. *Rights, Duties, Body, Will.*—While there is no property in a dead body so that it may be sold, there are rights and duties out of which may arise tort and criminal actions. The question of the right of a man to dispose of his body by will is not well settled in this country.⁸²² There are many cases that hold that a person has the right to make a binding testamentary disposition of his own body after death.⁸²³ But on the contrary it has been held that one can not by his will confer any right as to the disposition of his body.⁸²⁴

467. *Monument, Fence.*—Giving the right to bury in one's cemetery lot carries with it the right to erect a monument; but it does not carry with it the right to fence the cemetery lot or interfere with other graves therein. Therefore, the monument must be of such size and so located and erected as not to interfere with the rights of others.⁸²⁵

468. *Tombstone, Mother-in-Law.*—A husband has the right to remove a tombstone that his mother-in-law put over his wife's grave, and put up one of his own choice instead.⁸²⁶ The general rule is that vaults and tombstones are personal property and may be removed “in good faith and with care and decency” by the

[243]

⁸²⁰ Williams v. Williams, 20 Ch. Div., 659.

⁸²¹ Reg. v. Fox, 2 Q. B., 246.

⁸²² 52 Cen. L. J., 141.

⁸²³ O'Donnell v. Slack, 123 Cal., 285; 55 Pacific, 906; 43 L. R. A., 388; Neighbors v. Neighbors, 23 Ky. L., 1433; 65 S. W., 607; Larson v. Chase, 47 Minn., 307; 50 N. W., 238; 14 L. R. A., 85.

⁸²⁴ Enos v. Snyder, 131 Cal., 68; 63 Pac., 170; 82 Am. St. R., 330; 53 L. R. A., 21.

⁸²⁵ Thompson v. Deeds, 93 Ia., 228; 61 N. W., 842.

⁸²⁶ Durrell v. Haywood, 75 Mass., 248.

next of kin.⁸²⁷

469. *Trees, Authority.*—It is a criminal offense to cut trees in a cemetery without right or authority.⁸²⁸

470. *Charitable, Institution, Negligence.*—A Catholic cemetery without capital stock or shares and paying no profits nor dividends, does not come under the head of a charitable institution so as to relieve it from liability for negligence.⁸²⁹

471. *Equity, Repair, Injuries.*—A cemetery association may by bill in equity be forced to keep walks and drives in good repair and consequently is liable for injuries resulting from its negligence.⁸³⁰

[244]

⁸²⁷ *Boham v. Loeb*, 107 Ala., 604; 18 So., 300; *Hamilton v. State*, 30 Ind., 482; *Partridge v. First*, 39 Md., 631; *Fletcher v. Evans*, 140 Mass., 24; 2 N. E., 837.

⁸²⁸ *Commonwealth v. Viall*, 84 Mass., 512.

⁸²⁹ *Donnelly v. Boston*, 146 Mass., 163; 15 N. E., 505.

⁸³⁰ *Houston v. Drew*, 13 Tex. Cir. App., 536; 36 S. W., 802.

Chapter XXXIV. Miscellaneous

472. *Societies, Law.*—Religious societies organized in connection with a church or congregation are in law civil societies and not ecclesiastical corporations, and are governed by the law of the land. Therefore, the law of fraternities fully covers all questions that arise in such societies. The subject is too comprehensive to be treated at any length here.⁸³¹

473. *Society, Bishop.*—A society may expel a member on due notice and a fair trial. The refusal of the bishop to recognize a fraternity organized as a Roman Catholic society, does not prevent the society and its officers from exercising the powers of a religious corporation conferred by law nor prohibit its members from maintaining their religious worship.⁸³²

474. *Priest, Doorkeeper, Policemen, Arrest.*—A priest who was in charge of a parish and had control of the temporalities consisting of pew-rents, Sunday and other collections, graveyard, church, school, fees, and donations, on account of disorderly behavior of members issued tickets to those to be admitted and ordered a doorkeeper to prevent others from entering the church. A woman without a ticket and talking loudly, endeavored to force her way into the church, although there were several policemen on duty who attempted to stop her. She was arrested and her husband brought suit for false imprisonment. The court held that a clergyman has a right to keep disturbers out of the church and that the doorkeepers have a right to use sufficient force to carry out the orders of the priest; but when a doorkeeper went beyond those orders by causing the arrest of the woman, he was [245]

⁸³¹ Robertson v. Bullions, 11 N. Y., 243.

⁸³² Canadian v. Palmenter, 180 Mass., 415; 62 N. E., 740.

not acting within the apparent scope of his employment and the priest was not liable.⁸³³

475. *Saloon, Church, License.*—A man owned premises that had been occupied as a saloon from 1894. In 1896 the New York law prohibiting saloons to be licensed within 200 feet of a church, except places where liquor traffic had been carried on prior to that time, was passed. In 1898 a church was built within 200 feet of the saloon in question. After the building of the church, the saloon was vacated for about ten days during a change of saloonkeepers, and an action was brought to revoke the license of the new saloonkeeper. The court held that the incidental interruption of the business did not bring the place within the prohibition of the law, and that the license could not be revoked.⁸³⁴

[246]

476. *Y. M. C. A.*—The Y. M. C. A. on account of giving lunches, lectures, and having a gymnasium, for which charges are made, is not a charitable institution so as to be exempt from liability in case of negligence. Property is exempt only when used for exempt purposes exclusively.⁸³⁵

477. *Students, Vote, Residence.*—Students at a seminary studying for the priesthood do not thereby lose their residence at their homes and are not entitled to vote where a college is located. The fact that they intend to remain for four years, become clergymen, and then go to wherever they may be called, does not give them the right of residence, and there is no distinction between them and any other students away from home at school.⁸³⁶ However, a student of full age might become a voter in the college precinct if he has no other fixed domicile.⁸³⁷

[247]

⁸³³ *Barabasz v. Kabat*, 86 Md., 23; 37 At., 720.

⁸³⁴ *In re Hawkins*, 165 N. Y., 188; 58 N. E., 884.

⁸³⁵ *Chapin v. Holyoke*, 165 Mass., 280; 42 N. E., 1130; *Am. & Eng. Cyc. of L.*, "Taxation."

⁸³⁶ *In re Barry*, 164 N. Y., 18; 58 N. E., 12.

⁸³⁷ *American Law of Electors*, McCrary, sec. 41.

478. *“My Wife, Anna Jones,” Divorce, Insurance.*—A bequest or devise to “my wife, Anna Jones,” is not changed by a divorce without some evidence to prove that the testator did not intend his divorced wife to share in his estate, unless the judgment of divorce made a division of the property. The same is true of a policy of insurance or benefit certificate. However, there are exceptions that weaken the rule and make its application in some States uncertain.⁸³⁸

479. *Bells, Sick, Injunction.*—On the complaint of an injured person, a court will issue an injunction restraining the ringing of church, convent, or other bells, at unusual hours or when their noise is injurious to the sick, or when their vibration affects other premises. As the law of nuisances applies in such cases, an exact statement of when the court should issue the injunction or whether the injunction should be temporary or perpetual, can not be given; but when the personal or property rights of others are affected, an injunction may be granted. The fact that the bells are chimes or part of a clock does not change the rule.⁸³⁹ [248]

480. *Marriage, Impediments, Recording.*—Legal marriage may be contracted only between unmarried persons not related within the prohibited degrees of consanguinity or affinity, of lawful age and sufficient mental and physical capacity. Statutes vary greatly. In some States affinity is not considered a legal objection and first cousins may marry; in others, both are prohibited and other limitations of relationship, race, and color are fixed, and registration of the clergymen and licenses to wed are required. Also, the clergyman must report the marriage promptly to the proper office. Fines, penalties, and imprisonment

⁸³⁸ *Lansing v. Haynes*, 95 Mich., 16; 54 N. W., 699; *Baacke v. Baacke*, 50 Neb., 18; 69 N., 303; *Jones, Jr., estate*, 211 Pa., 364; 60 At., 915; 69 L. R. A., 940; *White v. B. of A. Y.*, 124 Ia., 293; 99 N. W., 1071; 66 L. R. A., 164.

⁸³⁹ *Rogers v. Elliott*, 146 Mass., 349; 15 N. E., 768; *Davis v. Sawyer*, 133 Mass., 289; 43 Am. R., 519; *Harrison v. St. Mark's*, 12 Phil., 259; *Soltau v. DeHeld*, 9 Eng. L. & E., 104; *Leete v. Pilgrim Cong. Ch.*, 14 Mo. App., 590.

are usually provided for violating the law. Informal marriages may or may not be voidable or void.⁸⁴⁰

[249]

481. Charivari, Wedding Pranks.—Charivari, assaults, and disorderly conduct are unlawful at all times, and can not be justified by custom.⁸⁴¹ A newly wedded man who was serenaded (charivaried) by his neighbors by firing guns, blowing horns, beating pans, rattling horse-fiddles, etc., after ordering the rioters off fired into the crowd and wounded one of them. On trial for assault with intent to kill, the groom was acquitted. Shooting might not be justifiable in cases where less potent agencies, such as a horsewhip or dogs, are sufficient, or where the immediate protection of person or property does not call for it. The law should be invoked when no exigency for force exists.⁸⁴²

[250]

482. Infallibility of Courts.—When a question of law at issue in a case is duly presented to a supreme court which is the court of last resort, its decision thereon becomes “the law of the case” and is thereafter binding upon the court itself and all the courts inferior to it; and no matter how often that identical case may come before the court on subsequent appeals, the questions already decided therein will not be reconsidered. It is interesting to compare this principle of our courts with Papal infallibility.⁸⁴³ Courts do not always adhere to the rule.⁸⁴⁴

483. Money Stolen, Bailed or Loaned, Insolvency, Gifts.—Property stolen by A. or left with him as bailee to be returned in specie, can not be given away by him for charity.

⁸⁴⁰ Osborne v. Osborne, New York, Sept. 12, 1908; Landry v. Bellanger, 45 So., 956; 15 L. R. A., N. S., 463; Lawson v. Lawson, 30 Tex. Civ. App., 43; 69 S. W., 246; Schmitt v. Schneider, 109 Ga., 628; 35 S. E., 145.

⁸⁴¹ 14 Cyc, 466.

⁸⁴² Minagham v. State, 77 Wis., 643; 46 N. W., 894; Gilmore v. Fuller, 198 Ill., 130; 65 N. E., 84.

⁸⁴³ Am. & Eng. Ency. of L., “Stara decisis,” “Res judicata”; 67 Central L. Journal, 255; Pautz v. Plankinton, 126 Wis., 37; 105 N. W., 482; Whittaker v. Mich. M. L. Ins. Co., 83 N. E., 899.

⁸⁴⁴ Bonacum v. Murphy, 71 Neb., 463; 104 N. W., 180.

Also, when a man is insolvent he has no right to give away any of his property.⁸⁴⁵ That has been the rule of law since Coke laid down the maxim: "A man must be just before he is generous." One is insolvent when his debts exceed the value of his unexempt property.⁸⁴⁶ When an insolvent debtor makes a gift, a creditor may sue and recover from the donee; or in a proper case the creditor may force the debtor into bankruptcy to recover the gift.⁸⁴⁷ The want of knowledge or good faith of the donee is immaterial and no defense to an action to recover the property.⁸⁴⁸

[251]

⁸⁴⁵ U. S. Bankruptcy Act, sec. 1, sub-sec. 25.

⁸⁴⁶ 20 Cyc, 457.

⁸⁴⁷ 20 Cyc, 1243; Insolvent Corporations, Wait, sec. 637.

⁸⁴⁸ 20 Cyc, 469.

Index

The References Are To The Sections.

A

Abandoned cemetery, 449;
property reverts, 295.

Accepting a draft, officer, 162.

Access to cemetery, right of, 442.

Account, officers must, 297.

Action in church tribunal, 86;
for expulsion, 137;
unincorporated party, 217;
slander by deceased, 382.

Acts of majority, when void, 177.

Adjournment, 181.

Adoption of children, 367.

Adoration, 29.

Adverse possession, cemetery, 446;
church property, 257.

Aid from Government, 46.

Agent, priest of bishop, 270.

- Alabama, bequest for Masses, 316.
- Ambiguity, proof clearing, 326.
- Ambiguous provision, proof, 272.
- America, civil and common law, 17.
- Anonymous letter not privileged, 224.
- Answer of priest as witness, 222.
- Appeal, church tribunal, 86;
 right of, 206.
- Application, for cemetery, 427.
- Appointed officers, 121.
- Appropriation for hospital, 44;
 can not be from taxes, 335;
 indirect, 335, 46, 28, 375.
- Argument when privileged, 387, 386.
- Arrears, pew rent, membership, 250.
- Arrest, authority, damages, 474.
- Assault and battery, 387.
- Assessment, of pews, 243;
 of cemetery void, 293.
- Assistance to enforce order, 356.
- Association, discipline, bishop, 454.

Attainder, not lawful, 36.

Attendance, test of membership, 144.

Authority in ancient nations, 3;
inferior must obey, 85, 93;
use of force by priest, 100;
court may decide contested, 112;
of priest as to cemetery, 281;
of sexton in church, 314;
of teacher outside of school, 355;
to cut trees in cemetery, 469.

Autopsy, authority to make, 462.

B

Bankruptcy, church, 302.

Bailee, gift of, 483;
donor, 483.

Ballot, when required, 149.

Baptism, how to record, 191.

Bells, ringing a nuisance, 479.

Benefit, work for, on Sunday, 409.

“Benefit of the Clergy,” 10.

Bequest, legatees, religion, 136, 320;
purpose of enforceable, 284;
laws of state control, 306;
consent of heirs to change, 313;
mistake may not defeat, 317.

Birth, how record kept, 191.

Bible in schools, 29, 49, 218, 347, 348;
 constitution of sect, 127;
 constitutional rights, 350;
 Indian schools, 375.

Bigamy, unconstitutional, 38;
 charge of, slander, 384.

Bishop, superior authority, 81, 83;
 subject to Pope, 82;
 discipline of priest, 99;
 church debts, 169, 261;
 removal of priest, 199;
 deed of church land, 287;
 control over cemetery, 454;
 removal of bodies, 460;
 societies, control of, 473.

Bishop's residence, taxes, 331.

Blasphemy, a crime, 405, 218.

Blessed Virgin, 406.

Board acts as body only, 360;
 authority outside of school, 355.

Bodies, change of cemeteries, 450;
 custody of deed, 457;
 disposing by will, 466;
 property in, 465.

Bologna, law school of, 14.

Burned church, land title, 294.

Building, liability of members, 56;
 subscriptions for, 275;
 committee, liability, 170;
 contracts, liability, 233.

Burial, right of, 113;
 regulations, 429, 445;
 non-resident, 458;
 right to control, 464.

Burying dogs in cemetery, 452.

Business, religion, 110;
 notice of meeting, 176;
 law will enforce, 230;
 Sunday, 408;
 or property, libel of, 394.

By-laws of sects and church, 22;
 govern elections, 148, 152;
 subject to state law, 153;
 control officers, 153, 159;
 amending, 252;
 of cemetery association, 445.

C

California missions, 268.

Canon Law, analysis, 6.

Canons of the church, title, 280.

Casting vote, chairman, 186.

Catholic Church, corporation, 58;
control of pews in, 239;
free pews, reformation, 237;
discipline, suits, 208.

Cemetery, authority over, 281;
assessment for taxes, 293;
Indian, 372.

Certificate, cemetery lot, 438;
conditions of, 454;
of election, effect of, 157.

Certified copies as evidence, 192.

Challenge of voter, 147;
waiver of, 186.

“Chances,” “fairs,” unlawful, 420.

[253]

Change of use of land, 53;
of church government, 67;
name of church, 69;
doctrine, membership, 289;
burial place, 450.

Charge for services, 166.

Charges against member, 202, 389.

Charitable institutions, 333, 338;
liability, 470;
trust, trustee, 325.

Charity, definition of, 328, 409;
Elks, Masons, 333;
of debtor, 483.

Charivari, unlawful, 481.

Charter limits corporation, 153;
by-laws under, 252;
real estate, 339;
of cemetery, 428.

Chastisement, by teacher, 354.

Child, rights, duties, 361, 370;
expelling from school, 352;
religion of, 365;
out of school, 352, 355.

“Christian Healer,” consent to 417.

“Christian Scientist,” manslaughter, 42.

Christians, who, are, 24.

Church, definition, 20, 23, 24, 398;
secession, heresy, 70, 126;
debts of, bishop, 169;
removal of, authority, 275;
buildings, use of, 276;
majority control, 289;
Indian churches, 372;
personal property, when, 299;
and state, 15;
records, evidence, 191;
births, baptisms, 191;
when libelous, 381;
tribunals, authority, 216.

“Church of Latter Day Saints,” 39.

Citizens, clergy as, 92;
Indians, states, 371.

Civil rights, procedure, 207;
state protects, 210;
law, Florida, Louisiana, 17.

Clerk of church board, authority, 177.

Clergy, bishop may change, 83;
exemptions of, 103;
salaries, 106.

Clergyman, definition, 31;
duties and rights, 92;
privileged evidence, 224;
undue influence, 318;
disciplinary rights, 386.

Closing church, 213.

Color of title, possession, 257.

Collateral attack, 307.

Commissioner of Indian schools, 375.

Common law and the church, 12;
crimes under, 401.

Communicants, membership, 144.

Competent witness, 220.

Complaint, allegations, 215.

Conditions, 436.

Confessions, privacy, 100;
not evidence, 221, 226;
non-sacramental, 223, 224, 225;
witness, privilege, 222.

Confidential communications, libel, 377.

Congregation, authority in, 65;
insubordinate, 90.

Conscience, Bible, law, 350.

Consent, to hold meeting, 179;
to sell or mortgage, 264;
daughter becoming nun, 366;
to "Christian Healer," 417;
to location of cemetery, 427;
bishop's to remove body, 460;
court may, 461.

Consideration, good, 234, 236.

Constantine, Christians, 9.

Constitution of a church, 21, 81, 88;
of U. S. and Church, 45, 68, 127;
members, Bible, 127, 350, 358.

Consolidation of churches, 73.

Contests, how settled, 158;
suit for bequest, 319;
to hold meeting, 179.

Contracts, with churches, 46, 335, 345;
 binding members, 59;
 State courts enforce, 292;
 Sunday, 410.

Contributions to deposed priest, 104;
 right to enjoy, 310.

Control of business of church, 72;
 vests in corporation, 73;
 doctrine and discipline, 122;
 under state law, 155;
 board of trustees, 161, 279;
 societies' collections, 274;
 cemetery, joint lot, 451.

Controversy, submission of, 97.

Convent, consent of parents, 366.

Conditions, what are binding, 75;
 pews, lease, sale, 242;
 bequests, deeds, 284, 313, 321;
 quit claim of heirs, 286.

Corporation, members, 253;
 bequests to religious, 306;
 name, error, 317.

Corpse, burial, mutilation, 463, 466.

Corrective authority over wife, 370.

Councils of Church, 378.

Counsel in church tribunal, 200.

- Courts, state, 60;
 - church and state, 216;
 - do not decide doctrine, 311;
 - religion of child, 365.
- Court of equity, church title, 212.
- Creditors, securing, 263;
 - gifts of debtor, 483;
 - bankruptcy, 302.
- Creed, state courts, 211.
- Crime, polygamy, 40;
 - church tribunal, 292;
 - charging, slander, 388;
 - sins distinguished, 396;
 - blasphemy is a, 405;
 - autopsy to detect, 462.
- Criticisms of clergy, 385.
- Cruel chastisement unlawful, 354.
- Curate, appointment of, 53, 96;
 - salary of, 108.
- Custody of children, 361;
 - of wife, 369;
 - of corpse, 457, 464.
- Custom of church, meetings, 180.
- Cy-pres doctrine abrogated, 325.

D

Damages, property destroyed in riot, 52;
expulsion from society, 188.

Death, record, proof, 191.

Debts, unincorporated body, 54;
may be limited by law, 74;
permission to incur, 101;
individual liability, 117;
seceders liable for, 126;
bishop's liability, 169;
mortgage, 261, 263;
power to settle, 263.

Decisions of church court, 88;
in submitted case, 97;
appeal from church, 206;
final in doctrine, 209.

Deed by order of court, 254;
description of grantee, 259;
to bishop, effect, 262;
in priest's name, 267, 270;
conditions in, 284;
cemetery lot, 41;
form cemetery deed, 438.

[255]

De facto officers, acts, 165.

Defenses, law, canon law, 8.

Deficiency judgment, 232.

Definitions, 20, 34;
excommunication, 131.

Delegated authority, 82.

Deposed clergymen, donations to, 104.

Devise on condition of faith, 135;
uncertainty of, 271;
of cemetery lot, 435.

Diocese, state law in, 51;
title of church, 266;
rules for cemeteries, 455.

Directors and Bible, 347.

Direct payment of tax to church, 345.

Disability of members, 57.

Discretion of officers, 167.

Disease from cemetery, 434.

Discipline and officers, 63;
bishop may enforce, 83, 89;
members subject to, 90, 381;
inferior authority, 308, 381;
tribunals of church, 386, 396;
physical, unlawful, 387.

Dismissal of clergyman, 109.

Disqualified to hold office, 134.

Dissolution of congregation, 73;
funds of church, 78;
resulting trust, 327.

Disturbances at church, 213;
 crime, punishment, 397.

Disturbing a religious meeting, 400.

Diverted trust fund, 298.

Division of church, 129, 276;
 title to property, 290.

Divorce, legacy, insurance, 478.

Doctor, necessary, 416.

Doctrine of church, 21, 25;
 change of effect, 53;
 condition in deed, 278;
 pewholders must not dictate, 309;
 discipline, 93.

Dog, burying in cemetery, 452.

Domicile of family, 370.

Donation conditioned, 41.

Donor, religion, proof, 272.

Doorkeeper, exceeding order, 474.

Drunkenness, dying in, 443.

Duties of adopted parents, 367;
 Indian inspectors, 373;
 to bury dead, 466.

Dwelling, priest as servant, 98;
of family husband's, 370;
cemetery near, 430.

E

Early Christians, law, 7.

Easement, title, cemetery lot, 435.

Ecclesiastical corporations, 26;
court, 10;
matters, courts, 209.

Education for priesthood, 324;
of children, control, 343.

Elks, 333.

England and Roman law, 16;
confession privileged, 226.

English law, 17.

Entries in church records, 189.

Equity, priest's salary, 301;
cemetery, corpses, 459;
cemetery repairs, 471.

Error in deed, 260;
latent in devise, 326.

Established church, 18.

Establishment of religion, 37.

Estates, ecclesiastical courts, 11.

Evidence of incorporation, 64;
parish books, 189, 191;
certified copies, 192;
parol evidence, 273;
privileged questions, 221.

Excommunication, authority, 87;
minor is lawful, 87;
non-tolerati is unlawful, 87;
legal effect, 167, 136;
libel and slander, 381.

Excuse, drunkenness, 407.

Executors, pew rent, 249;
custody of corpse, 465.

Exemptions to clergy, attachment, execution, 118, 432.

Exempt church property, 329;
execution, 432.

Exhume, crime, fraud, 462.

Expelled, excommunicated, 87, 120, 167.

Expulsion, right of church, 137, 139;
minority, 141;
from society, 188.

Exercise, religion in school, 29, 346; see "Bible."

F

Facilities for negro education, 358.

Factions trying each other, 112;
property of, 211.

“Fairs” are unlawful, 420.

Fair trial is natural right, 202.

Faith, dying in, burial, 113;
member must conform, 142.

False statements, slander, 223;
imprisonment, 387;
by clergymen, libel, 388.

Family domicile, 370.

Father, duties and rights, 361;
custody of child, 361, 362;
married child, 369.

Fee, title in, when, 262, 440.

Fees of priest, 105, 106.

Fence in cemetery, 467.

Fishing on Sunday, 408.

Force to subdue pupil, 356;
to expel disturber, 403;
remove trespasser, 248.

Foreign language, 124.

Forfeiture of membership, 61, 138;
provision in will as to, 285;
by use excepted, 444.

Fraternity, members' faith, 136;
excommunication of member, 136.

Fraud, false "prophet", 171;
insurance, autopsy, 462.

Free church seats, regulation, 248.

Freedom of worship, 142.

Free exercise of religion, 37.

Freemason, burial of, 439.

Funds, of church, 58;
dissolved church, 78;
division of unlawful, 129;
lien on, for money paid, 267;
diverting from use, 298.

Funeral expenses, 229;
on Sunday, 411.

Future uses, devise, 323.

G

Gambling, 420.

General laws, corporations, 62.

Gifts of a bankrupt, 483.

God, belief, public office, 48;
crimes against, 406.

Good faith, libel, slander, 383.

Gratian, jurist, 13.

Gratuitous services, 337.

Guardianship, ecclesiastical, 11;
religion of ward, 365.

[257]

H

Harmony, want of, 290.

Hearing, fair trial, 139;
evidence, 202, 219.

Hearsay evidence, 202, 219.

Heirs and assigns, cemetery, 441.

Heresy, legal status, 312.

Hold over officers, 150.

Hospitals, public money, 44;
not taxable, 331.

Hostile to religion, 41.

Hypocrite, slander, 389.

I

Identity of name or party, 256.

Illegal action, void, 141.

Illegitimate, custody, 362.

Immoral character, child, 352.

Impediments, marriage, 480.

Imprisonment, false, 387.

Improvements, cemetery lot, 447.

Income perquisites, 105.

Incorporated, liability, 119;
 powers, purposes, 125;
 charter, by-laws, 154.

Incorporation of church, 62, 64;
 congregation, 65, 77.

Incorporeal hereditament, pew, 238.

Independent society, status, 124.

Indians, wards, citizens, 371.

Indigent soldiers, tombstones, 424.

Induction, informal, 96.

Infallibility, judges, 482;
 comparisons, 482.

Infancy, marriage, convent, 366, 368.

Inherits, right of burial, 437.

Injunction, 479, 448, 312, 213, 140.

Injuries, liability, 471.

Innovations of doctrine, 308.

Insane, libel, slander, 383.

Inscriptions, offensive, 443.

Inspectors of election, 186;
of Indian schools, 373.

Institutions, charitable, 328;
damage suits, 336, 470;
public and private, 341.

Instrument of punishment, 364.

Insubordinate, discipline, 90.

Insubordination, trial, 139.

Insurance, divorce, 478.

Interest, adverse of officer, 160;
must have to sue, 217.

Interrupt religious service, 404.

J

Jews, constitution, 12;
Sunday, Sabbath, 412.

Judge of church court, 207;
may question witness, 222.

Judicial notice, 219;
not of church law, 265.

Jurisdiction, church court, 196;
notice of trial, 303;
U. S. cemeteries, 422.

Juror of church court, 207.

Justification, libel, slander, 395.

K

Key, evidence of possession, 169.

Kin, cemetery rights, 437, 441, 449, 453;
custody of corpse, 457, 463, 464;
damages for mutilation, 463.

L

Land, vested titles, 240;
Texan church, 269;
quantity limitation, 283, 305.

Language, libel, slander, 383.

[258]

Law and religion, 1;
religious liberty, 415.

Lay members, officers, 121.

Lease of pews, 248;
exempt property, 300;
with government, 345.

Leave to purchase, 280.

Legal notice, 71;
rights, church courts, 198.

Legatee, uncertain, 271, 322, 323.

Legitimized child, 363.

Liability of individuals, 54.

Libel and slander, 377, 382;
what may be, 377, 395.

Liberty, juvenile, 376.

License to do an act, 454;
revoking, resisting, 475.

Lien for purchase money, 301.

Limits of cemetery, 430.

Limited debt by by-laws, 74;
authority of inferior, 88.

Limitation, statutes of, 206;
land holding, 283, 305.

Liquor, libel and slander, 384;
near religious meeting, 404.

Loan to priest for church, 173.

Local corporation, power, 84.

Lord's Prayer, schools, 346, 218.

Lots given as subscription, 255;
cemetery, title, 440.

Lots isolated, taxed, 330.

M

Mail, prohibited, 419.

Major excommunication, 132.

Majority, what is, 80, 146, 151, 185;
unlawful acts, 128, 151, 289;
board, committee, 360.

Malice, libel and slander, 377.

Management, corporation, 57;
temporal affairs, 66;
factions, 211.

Mandamus, when issued, 140.

Manumission of child, 368.

Marriage, record of, 191;
infants, consent, 368;
Sunday promise, 410;
impediments, 480;
public school pupil, 357.

Maryland, cemetery law, 426.

Mass defined, 29.

Masses, bequests for, 316.

Masonic Order, charity, 333.

Materials, liability, 56.

Maternal relatives, child, 361.

Meetings of corporation, 80;
notice, time, place, 176;
consent, 60, 179.

Members, corporation, 65, 253;
slander of, 378;
cemetery owners, 428, 445.

Membership in church, 114;
society members, 61;
officers, 156;
condition, bequest, 320.

Methodist division, 130;
coalition, 310;
Presbyterians, 310.

Middle Ages, growth of law, 12.

Minister, definition, 32;
authority of Protestant, 81;
deposed, 104;
dismissal of, 109.

Minor, not church voter, 115 (see infant);
ex-communication, 87, 131.

Minutes, evidence, how kept, 189.

Misnomer, proof, 256.

Missions, California, 268.

Mississippi, bigotry, 50, 334.

Mistake, in deed or will, 317.

Misuse of property, 291.

Money, officers, 164;
 stolen title, gift, 483;
 responsibility for, 172;
 gift to charity, 483;
 sewing circle, 175;
 congregation, 274;
 advanced by priest, 109.

Monks, land, 268.

Monuments, free, 423, 424;
 offensive, 443, 467;
 injuring, 421, 423, 429.

Mortgage, foreclosure, 232;
 bishop's authority, 261;
 cemetery lot, 432;
 church property, 264.

Mortmain, where in force, 340.

Mother, child, 362, 366.

Mother Church, heresy, 122.

Mother-in-law, tombstone, 468.

Mummy, property in, 465.

Murder, correcting child, 364.

Mutilation of corpse, 462, 463, 464.

“My wife, Anna Jones,” will, insurance, 478.

N

Name, change of corporate, 69;
importance, record, 195;
error in bequest or deed, 317.

Natural Justice, influence, 5.

Necessaries, what are, 416.

Necessity, work of, 409.

Negligence, liability, 336, 470.

Negroes, burial of, 456.

Newspaper, criticism of priest, 385;
criticism of dead, 393.

New York church law, 50.

Non-baptized, burial, 443.

Non-members, burial of, 443;
officers, 116.

Non-residence, right of burial, 458.

Non-slave-holding, Methodists, 130.

Note, authority to make, 160;
when church bound, 163;
signers bound, 170.

Notice, legal, 71, 176, 264;
 due notice necessary, 146, 176;
 special meeting, 178, 264;
 service of, 180;
 waiver of, 205;
 given on Sunday, 410.

Nuns, individual property, 342.

Nuisance, cemetery, 434.

O

Obituary, libel, 392.

Object of juvenile courts, 376.

Obscene language, mail, 419.

Offense at common law, 401;
 under statutes, 396.

Office, religious qualifications, 48;
 membership qualifications, 156.

Officers, duties, rights, 63;
 non-members, 156, 116;
 libel, 392.

Official communication, libel, 379.

Ohio, Bible, 347.

Overdraft, authority, 160.

Orphan asylums, public money, 344.

P

Parent and child, duties, rights, 343;
direct studies, 353.

Parish, definition, 30;
incorporating, 51;
pastor's relation, 91.

[260]

Parishioner, definition, 30.

Parsonage, use, 53;
rented, taxes, 332.

Parochial schools, 343.

Partners, unincorporated church, 54.

Parties to suits, 76, 214.

Pastoral duties, slander, 380.

Pastor, liability for salary, 55;
relations terminated, 91.

Paying money to deposed clergy, 213.

Permission from superior, 101.

Personalty, church on rollers, 299.

Perversion of property, 291.

Persecutions, promoted law, 8.

Pew, right to occupy, 242, 244;
removal from, 247.

Pew rent of deceased, 249;
 qualification of voter, 250.

Pew rights, 231-250.

Philosophical foundations of law, 4.

Physician, Sunday, 411;
 Christian Scientist, 42, 417;
 furnishing for family, 416.

Place, notice of meeting, 143.

Police power, cemeteries, 429.

Politics, minister, arrest, 418.

Poll list of church voters, 145.

Policemen, arrest, 474.

Pollution of water, 431.

Pope, superior authority, 82.

Possession, key indicates, 168.

Powers of corporation, 164.

Prayer in school, 348;
 meeting, notice, 187.

Presbyterians and Methodists, 310.

Preserve order, priest, 403.

Preside, who may, 159.

President, Indians, trade, 374.

Presumptions, church law, 228.

Presiding officer, 183.

Presumed authority, 101.

Priest, bishop not liable for salary, 98;
fellow-servant of bishop, 95;
semi-servant, 98;
removal, trial, 99, 199;
borrowing money for church, 173;
possession of, 98, 197;
deed in priest's name, 267;
agent of bishop, 270;
excommunication, slander, 380;
newspaper criticism, 385;
using force, order, 403;
excluding disorderlies, 474;
witness, privilege, 221, 222;
answers, 222;
suits by and against, 208.

Priesthood, discipline, 89;
bequest to educate for, 324.

Principal service, notice, 180.

Private school, disturbing, 399.

Privacy, confessor, 100.

Privileges of church court, 196;
witness, 221, 222;
cemetery, 441.

Privileged, confessions, 221;
official communications, 379.

Probable cause, slander, arrest, 390.

Procedure in church court, 207.

Process to obtain jurisdiction, 303.

Profanity, a crime, 407.

[261]

Profane language in church, 397;
swearer, libel, 393.

Promise, consideration, 234, 236.

Proof of the notice, 182;
crime, 407.

Proper record in parish, 194.

Property, title in whom, 63;
confiscation, 94;
execution against, 118;
custody of, 197;
factions, 211;
restrictions on amount, 304;
of nuns, 342;
in a corpse, 465.

Protest against burial, 453.

Protestant, who is a, 43;
New Hampshire, 43;
superior authority, 81;
services in schools, 29;
teacher, taxes for, 47.

Public institutions, support, 341;
cemeteries, 433;
school Bible, 348;
religious services in, 29;
residence of pupils, 359;
health, cemetery, 434.

Punishment in school, 354, 355;
by parent, 364.

Purposes of a gift or bequest, 278;
acquired for church, 282;
leased lands, 300;
exempt from taxes, 329.

Q

Quarrel, secession, 130.

Quasi-public corporations, 26.

Quit-claim, conditions, 286.

Quorum, number necessary, 80;
who counted, 146;
majority, 185, 80, 146.

R

Rations for Indian schools, 375.

Real estate taxes, 51;
purposes, held for, 282;
changing purpose, 339.

Rebuilding, pewholders, 245.

Rector or pastor, 33.

Rector, induction, 96;
charges against, 384.

Record, keeping, 195.

Recording marriage, 480.

Redress of priest, dismissal, 199.

Reformation and law, 13;
pews rented, sold, 237.

Reformatories, juvenile courts, 376.

Regular church organization, 70, 111.

Regulation of cemeteries, 433.

Relation of pastor to parish, 91.

Relatives, abandoned cemetery, 449.

Religion, ancient, 2;
corporations, 26;
definition, 34;
Christian, 24;
influence on law, 1;
crime under, 40;
anti-religion, freedom, 41;
guardian proselyte, 365;
crimes against, 406.

Religious garb, 28, 49;
liberty, 18, 28, 49, 415;
membership, 110, 111;
service, consideration, 230;
tests, 35;
tolerance, 18, 28;
society, 20, 23;
worship, 29.

Remedies in church court, 204.

Remodeling, pewholders, 245.

Removal, of clergy, 201;
of animal carcasses, 452;
of building, 275;
of corpse, 460, 461.

Rented pews, 237;
parsonage, 332;
priest's rights, 240.

Repair of cemetery, 471.

Repeating slander, 395.

Residence of students, 477.

Res judicata, 482.

Restrictions on property, 304;
corporation, 249.

Residents of district, 359.

Resulting trust, 327.

Revenues of parish, 279.

Revert, lands when, 294, 295.

Revocable license, 454.

Reorganization of corporation, 79.

Ridicule of holy beings, 406.

Right, natural, law, 3;
 constitutional, 43;
 possession, key, 168;
 vested property, 292, 210;
 adoption, child, 367;
 burial, 437, 439;
 custody of corpse, 466;
 to occupy a pew, 242.

Riot, county liable, 52.

“Robbed,” libel, slander, 389.

Rome, source of law, 5.

Roman Catholic Church, 82.

Roman law in England, 16.

Rules of church, 114;
 voters in church, 184;
 evidence, 193, 219-229;
 title in name of bishop, 266;
 diocesan, cemeteries, 455.

S

Sabbath, violation of, 218.

Sacraments, slander, 391.

Salary, priest's, 55, 95;
lien for, 301.

Sale in perpetuity, of pew, 241;
of church property, 258.

Saloon near church, 475.

Schism, secession, 130.

School, Indian, 372, 375;
public, 343, 344;
parochial, 343;
house, church, 351;
master, authority, 355;
moneys, orphanages, 344.

Seats, free, 248.

Secession, result, 72, 130;
property, funds, 123, 319;
debts of church, 126.

Secret societies, 221.

Sect, definitions, 27, 58, 94, 313.

Sectarianism, 27, 28, 29.

Sectarian, 28;
Bible, 375.

Secular courts and church, 204;
 matters, doctrinal, 84;
 work, Sunday, 413.

Selling pew on execution, 246.

Sentence, publishing libel, 133.

Sepulture, right of, 140.

Sermon, slander, 388.

Servant, priest of bishop, 98.

Services, pay for, 108;
 wife's in home, 370;
 divine, disorder, 402;
 religious, 29.

Seventh-Day observers, 412.

Sewing circle, moneys, 175.

Sexton, salary, 174;
 authority in church, 314.

Shakers, property of, 58.

Sick, bells disturbing, 479.

Signature, "Nalty Family," 234.

Sins and crimes, 396.

Sisters, hospital, public money, 44.

Slander at trial, 203.

Slave-holding, Methodists, 130.

Smoking in church, 397.

Societies, members, 61;
distinct from congregation, 124;
Sunday meetings, 413;
governed by laws, 472;
bishop's control of, 473;
secret, 221.

Sold pews, 237.

Soldiers' tombstones, 423.

Sovereignty, meaning, 38.

Spanish territory, church, 277.

[263]

Special damages, slander, 394.

Special law, incorporation, 62;
meeting, notice, 178;
purpose, money given for, 235.

Spiritual authority, 87.

Standard of doctrine, 25, 29.

Stara decisis, 482.

State authority, cemeteries, 425.

States, each sovereign, 38;
restrictions in church lands, 304;
education, books, 343, 349;
cemeteries, 459, 421.

Statutes, wills, bequests, 315;
cemeteries, 421, 426.

Stipulation, cemetery, 454.

Strangers, voting, 146;
burial in cemetery, 443;
stranger in lot, 453.

Students, voters, where, 477.

Studies, control of school, 353.

Subordinate organization, 125.

Subsequent laws to constitution, 68.

Subscriptions, right to solicit, 102;
unpaid, liability, 119, 234;
consideration, 234, 236;
lot given as, 255;
Sunday, 411;
special purpose of, 235.

Successors, officers, 150, 158;
bishop's, 287.

Suits, parties, 76, 217;
must have right, 76, 94, 235;
in name of one for others, 214;
prevent perverted use, 291;
priest, 208.

Sunday, services in school, 351;
violations of, 408;
when begins and ends, 414.

Sunday school, church, 29, 398.

Superioress, liability, 172.

Supporting church, state, 334.

Support, test of membership, 111.

Suspension by bishop, 201.

Surgeon at hospital, 337.

T

Tax to support Protestantism, 47;
on pews, 243;
incorporation, 51.

Taxes, bishop's residence, 265, 331.

Teacher, religious exercise, 346;
studies of pupils, 353.

Temporal affairs, corporation, 66, 309.

Term of office, 158.

Testimony, church court, 203;
on trial privileged, 386.

Test oath, unconstitutional, 36.

Texan Revolution, church, 269.

Text-books, board controls, 349.

Thanks as pay, 166.

Theory of church crimes, 405.

Time of meeting, 143;
 condition, deed, gift, 284;
 disturbance of meeting, 402.

Title, deed, 254;
 adverse possession, 257;
 proof of, 265, 266, 280;
 monks in California, 268;
 divided church, 290;
 mortmain, 340;
 cemetery lot, 439.

Tobacco, use of, slander, 384.

Tolling bell, slander, 392;
 when nuisance, 479.

[264]

Tombstones, 423, 424;
 right to put up, 468.

Torts, church courts, 292;
 corpse, mutilating, 463.

Trades taught Indians, 374.

Traffic, disturbing meeting, 404.

Treasurer, authority of, 162.

Trees, cutting in cemetery, 469.

Trespass in cemetery, 429, 448.

Tribunals, church, 19;
decision of, 97;
procedure privileged, 377, 386.

Trial, injunction against, 99;
church, lawful, 197;
counsel for parties, 200;
judgment, 201;
proceedings privileged, 203.

True religion, 2, 311.

Trust, enforcing, 60;
fraud creating, 171;
courts of equity, 212;
sale in perpetuity, 241;
bishop, land, 262, 287;
evidence of, 273;
vests in whom, 278;
distinguished, 296;
holding for others, 340.

Trustees of church, 58;
disqualified, 134;
duties and powers, 58, 155;
note by trustees, 163;
compensation of, 166;
bequests to, 251;
vacancies, how filled, 288.

Trust funds, 297.

Two-family lot in cemetery, 451.

U

Uncertainty, legatees, 271, 322, 323.

Undertaker, duties, rights, 314.

Undue influence of clergy, 318.

Uniformity, 190.

Unincorporated church, 85, 117;
liability of members, 251;
who may manage, 154.

Unincorporated congregation, 217;
parish, 117.

United States, 422, 227.

Usages, pew rent, perquisites, 105;
election, 148;
proof of church, 228.

Use, special by deed or devise, 53;
for church, pews, 240;
of parish buildings, 276;
distinguished, 296;
forfeited, how, 444.

V

Vacancy in office, 288.

Vacate cemetery, 459.

Vested rights, 294;
forfeiture, 72, 294.

Violation of discipline, 402.

Virgin, Blessed, mail, 406.

Void, devise or gift, 135;
elections, 143, 177.

Voire dire examination, 222, 225.

Vote of excommunication, 133;
students at college, 477. (See "Ballot," "Usage.")

Voters, qualifications, 144, 184, 250;
poll list of, 145;
challenge of, 186.

Votes, cast, majority, 151;
inspectors, 186;
illegal, effect, 186.

Vows, property rights, 342.

W

Wages of Sisters, 49;
of sexton, 174.

Waiver of notice, 205;
challenge, 186.

Warden, wages, 174;
authority, 174.

Wards, Indians are, 371;
religion of, 365.

Wedding pranks, unlawful, 481.

Well, cemetery polluting, 431.

White children, public schools, 357.

Will, conditions, 285;
 under statutes, 315;
 slander by will, 382;
 disposing of corpse, 457, 466.

Wisconsin's statutes, 50.

Wisconsin Industrial School for Girls, 28.

Withdrawal from church, 127.

Witness in church trial, 207;
 civil courts, 222.

Worship, who determines, 308;
 religious, 29.

Written notice required, 187.

Y

Y. M. C. A., taxes, 476.

Books Of Doctrine, Instruction, Devotion, Meditation, Biography, Novels, Juveniles, Etc. Published By Benziger Brothers

Books not marked *net* will be sent postpaid on receipt of the advertised price. Books marked *net* are such where ten per cent must be added for postage. Thus a book advertised at *net* \$1.00 will be sent postpaid on receipt of \$1.10.

Doctrine, Instruction, Etc.

ABANDONMENT; or, Absolute Surrender of Self to Divine
Providence. CAUSSADE, S.J. *net*, 0 50

ADORATION OF THE BLESSED SACRAMENT, THE.
TESNIÈRE. 0 50

ANECDOTES AND EXAMPLES ILLUSTRATING THE
CATHOLIC CATECHISM. SPIRAGO. *net*, 1 50

ANGELS OF THE SANCTUARY. MUSSER. *net*, 0 15

APOSTLES' CREED. MÜLLER, C.S.S.R. *net*, 1 10

ART OF PROFITING BY OUR FAULTS. ST. FRANCIS DE
SALES, *net*, 0 50

AUTOBIOGRAPHY OF ST. IGNATIUS LOYOLA. O'CONOR.
net, 1 25

BEGINNINGS OF CHRISTIANITY. SHAHAN. *net*, 2 00

BLESSED SACRAMENT BOOK. LASANCE 1 50

BLOSSOMS OF THE CROSS. GIEHRL. 12mo. 1 25

BOOK OF THE PROFESSED. 3 volumes, each, *net*, 0 75

BOY-SAVERS' GUIDE. QUIN, S.J. *net*, 1 35

BREAD OF LIFE. WILLAM. 0 75

- CAMILLUS DE LELLIS. By A SISTER OF MERCY. *net*, 1 00
- CASES OF CONSCIENCE. SLATER, S.J. 2 vols. *net*, 3 50
- CATECHISM EXPLAINED, THE. SPIRAGO-CLARKE. *net*, 2 50
- CATHOLIC BELIEF. FAÀ DI BRUNO. 16mo, paper, *net*, 0.15;
cloth, *net*, 0 35
- CATHOLIC CEREMONIES. DURAND. Paper, 0.25; Cloth, 0 50
- CATHOLIC GIRL'S GUIDE. LASANCE. 1 25
- CATHOLIC HOME ANNUAL. 0 25
- CATHOLIC PRACTICE AT CHURCH AND AT HOME.
KLAUDER. Paper, 0.30; Cloth, 0 60
- CATHOLIC'S READY ANSWER. HILL, S.J. *net*, 2 00
- CEREMONIAL FOR ALTAR BOYS. BRITT, O.S.B. *net*, 0 35
- CHARACTERISTICS AND RELIGION OF MODERN
SOCIALISM. MING, S.J. *net*, 1 50
- CHARACTERISTICS OF TRUE DEVOTION. GROU, S.J. *net*,
0 75
- CHARITY THE ORIGIN OF EVERY BLESSING. *net*, 0 50
- CHILD PREPARED FOR FIRST COMMUNION. ZULUETA,
S.J. Paper. 0 05
- CHRIST IN TYPE AND PROPHECY. MAAS, S.J. 2 vols. *net*, 4
00
- CHRISTIAN APOLOGETICS. DEVIVIER-MESSMER. *net*, 2 00
- CHRISTIAN EDUCATION. O'CONNELL. *net*, 0 60
- CHRISTIAN FATHER. CRAMER-LAMBERT. 0 50
- CHRISTIAN MOTHER. CRAMER. 0 50
- CHURCH AND HER ENEMIES. MÜLLER, C.S.S.R. *net*, 1 10
- COMMENTARY ON THE PSALMS. (Ps. I-L.) BERRY. *net*, 2
00
- CORRECT THINKING FOR CATHOLICS. BUGG. 0 75
- COUNSELS OF ST. ANGELA. *net*, 0 25
- DEVOTIONS AND PRAYERS BY ST. ALPHONSUS. WARD.
1 25
- DEVOTIONS AND PRAYERS FOR THE SICK-ROOM.
KREBS. 0 50

DEVOTIONS TO THE SACRED HEART. HUGUET. 0 35

DEVOTION TO THE SACRED HEART OF JESUS.

NOLDIN-KENT. *net*, 1 25

DIVINE GRACE. WIRTH. 0 50

DIVINE OFFICE. ST. ALPHONSUS LIGUORI. *net*, 1 50

ECCLESIASTICAL DICTIONARY. THEIN. *net*, 5 00

EDUCATION OF OUR GIRLS. SHIELDS. *net*, 1 00

EUCCHARIST AND PENANCE. MÜLLER, C.SS.R. *net*, 1 10

EUCCHARISTIC CHRIST. TESNIÈRE. *net*, 1 25

EUCCHARISTIC LILIES. MAERY. *net*, 1 00

EXPLANATION OF BIBLE HISTORY. NASH. *net*, 1 60

EXPLANATION OF CATHOLIC MORALS. STAPLETON. 0 50

EXPLANATION OF BALTIMORE CATECHISM. KINKEAD.

net, 1 00

EXPLANATION OF THE COMMANDMENTS. MÜLLER. *net*,

1 10

EXPLANATION OF THE COMMANDMENTS. ROLFUS. 0 50

EXPLANATION OF THE CREED. ROLFUS. 0 50

EXPLANATION OF GOSPELS AND OF CATHOLIC

WORSHIP. LAMBERT-BRENNAN. Paper, 0.25;

Cloth, 0 50

EXPLANATION OF THE HOLY SACRAMENTS. ROLFUS. 0

50

EXPLANATION OF THE MASS. COCHEM. 0 50

EXPLANATION OF THE PRAYERS AND CEREMONIES

OF THE MASS. LANSLOTS, O.S.B. 0 50

EXPLANATION OF THE SALVE REGINA. ST. ALPHONSUS

LIGUORI. *net*, 0 75

EXTREME UNCTION. PHILLIP. Paper, 0 07

FLOWERS OF THE PASSION. 32mo. 0 50

FOLLOWING OF CHRIST. THOMAS À KEMPIS. Leather. 1 00

FOLLOWING OF CHRIST. THOMAS À KEMPIS. Plain Edition. 0

40

FOR FREQUENT COMMUNICANTS. ROCHE. Paper, 0 10

- FOUR LAST THINGS. COCHEM. *net*, 0 75
- FUNDAMENTALS OF THE RELIGIOUS LIFE. SCHLEUTER.
net, 0 60
- GENERAL CONFESSION MADE EASY. KONINGS. C.S.S.R. 0
15
- GENERAL INTRODUCTION TO THE STUDY OF THE
HOLY SCRIPTURES. GIGOT. *net*, 3 00
- GENERAL INTRODUCTION TO THE STUDY OF THE
HOLY SCRIPTURES. Abridged Edition. GIGOT.
net, 1 75
- GENERAL PRINCIPLES OF RELIGIOUS LIFE. VERHEYEN.
net, 0 50
- GENTLEMAN, A. EGAN. 0 75
- GIFT OF THE KING. RELIGIOUS H. C. J. 0 35
- GLORIES AND TRIUMPHS OF THE CATHOLIC CHURCH.
2 00
- GLORIES OF MARY. ST. ALPHONSUS LIGUORI. 0.50. Edition in
two volumes. *net*, 3 00
- GLORIES OF THE SACRED HEART. HAUSHERR, S.J. 0 50
- GOD, CHRIST, AND THE CHURCH. HAMMER, O.F.M. 2 00
- GOFFINE'S DEVOUT INSTRUCTIONS. 1 00
- GREAT ENCYCLICAL LETTERS OF POPE LEO XIII. *net*, 2
50
- GREAT MEANS OF SALVATION. ST. ALPHONSUS LIGUORI.
net, 1 50
- GREETINGS TO THE CHRIST-CHILD. 0 60
- GROWTH AND DEVELOPMENT OF THE CATHOLIC
SCHOOL SYSTEM IN THE UNITED
STATES. BURNS. *net*, 1 75
- GUIDE FOR SACRISTANS. *net*, 0 85
- HANDBOOK OF THE CHRISTIAN RELIGION. WILMERS.
net, 1 50
- HARMONY OF THE RELIGIOUS LIFE. HEUSER. *net*, 1 25
- HEAVEN OPEN TO SOULS. SEMPLE, S.J. *net*, 2 00

- HELP FOR THE POOR SOULS, ACKERMANN. 0 60
 HELPS TO A SPIRITUAL LIFE. SCHNEIDER. 0 50
 HIDDEN TREASURE. ST. LEONARD. 0 50
 HISTORY OF ECONOMICS. DEWE. *net*, 1 50
 HISTORY OF THE AMERICAN COLLEGE IN ROME.
 BRANN. *net*, 2 00
 HISTORY OF THE CATHOLIC CHURCH. ALZOG. 3 vols. *net*,
 8 00
 HISTORY OF THE CATHOLIC CHURCH.
 BUSINGER-BRENNAN. 2 00
 HISTORY OF THE CATHOLIC CHURCH. BRUECK. 2 vols.
 net, 3 00
 HISTORY OF THE MASS. O'BRIEN. *net*, 1 25
 HISTORY OF THE PROTESTANT REFORMATION.
 GASQUET. 0 50
 HOLINESS OF THE CHURCH IN THE NINETEENTH
 CENTURY, KEMPF-BREYMAN. *net*, 1 75
 HOLY BIBLE, THE. Ordinary Edition, Cloth, 1.25, and in finer
 bindings up to 5.00. India Paper Edition, 3.50 to
 6 00
 HOLY EUCHARIST. ST. ALPHONSUS LIGUORI. *net*, 1 50
 HOLY HOUR, THE. KEILEY. 0 15
 HOLY HOUR OF ADORATION. STANG. 0 60
 HOLY MASS, ST. ALPHONSUS LIGUORI. *net*, 1 50
 HOLY VIATICUM OF LIFE AS OF DEATH. DEVER. Paper,
 0.25; Cloth, 0 60
 HOW TO COMFORT THE SICK. KREBS, C.S.S.R. 0 50
 HOW TO MAKE THE MISSION. DOMINICAN FATHER. Paper, 0
 10
 IMITATION OF CHRIST. See "Following of Christ."
 IMITATION OF THE SACRED HEART. ARNOUDT. 1 25
 INCARNATION, BIRTH AND INFANCY OF JESUS
 CHRIST. ST. ALPHONSUS LIGUORI. *net*, 1 50
 IN HEAVEN WE KNOW OUR OWN. BLOT, S.J. *net*, 0 60

INDEX TO WORKS OF ST. ALPHONSUS LIGUORI.

GEIERMANN, C.SS.R. Paper. *net*, 0 10

INSTRUCTIONS ON THE COMMANDMENTS. ST.

ALPHONSUS LIGUORI. Cloth. 0 50

INTERIOR OF JESUS AND MARY. GROU, S.J. 2 vols. *net*, 2
00INTRODUCTION TO A DEVOUT LIFE. ST. FRANCIS DE
SALES. 0 50

LADY, A. BUGG. 0 75

LAWS OF THE KING. RELIGIOUS H. C. J. 0 35

LESSONS OF THE SAVIOUR. RELIGIOUS H. C. J. 0 35

LETTERS OF ST. ALPHONSUS LIGUORI. GRIMM, C.SS.R. 5
vols., each, *net*, 1 50LIFE OF MOTHER GUERIN. *net*, 2 00LIFE OF BLESSED MARGARET MARY ALACOQUE.
BOUGAUD. 0 50

LIFE OF THE BLESSED VIRGIN. ROHNER-BRENNAN. 0 50

LIFE OF CHRIST. BUSINGER-BRENNAN. *net*, 10 00

LIFE OF CHRIST. COCHEM-HAMMER. 0 50

LIFE OF CHRIST. BUSINGER. 2 00

LIFE OF HIS HOLINESS POPE PIUS X. 2 00

LIFE OF MADemoiselle LE GRAS. 0 50

LIFE OF ST. CATHARINE OF SIENNA. AYMÉ. 1 00

LIFE OF ST. IGNATIUS LOYOLA. GENELLI, S.J. 0 50

LIFE OF SISTER ANNE KATHARINE EMMERICH.
WEGENER-McGOWAN. *net*, 1 75

LITTLE ALTAR BOY'S MANUAL. 0 20

LITTLE LIVES OF THE SAINTS. BERTHOLD. 0 60

LITTLE MANUAL OF ST. ANTHONY. 0 15

LITTLE MANUAL OF ST. JOSEPH. LINGS. 0 15

LITTLE MANUAL OF ST. RITA. McGRATH. Cloth, 0.50;
Leather, 0 85

LITTLE MASS BOOK, LYNCH. Paper, 0 05

LITTLE MONTH OF MAY. 0 35

- LITTLE MONTH OF THE SOULS IN PURGATORY. 0 35
- LITTLE OFFICE OF THE BLESSED VIRGIN MARY. Edition
in Latin and English. Cloth, *net*, 0.75 and in finer
bindings up to *net*, 1.50. Edition in Latin only,
Cloth, *net*, 0.60 and in finer bindings up to *net*, 1
50
- LITTLE OFFICE OF THE IMMACULATE CONCEPTION.
Paper, 0 05
- LITTLE PICTORIAL LIVES OF THE SAINTS. 1 25
- LIVES OF THE SAINTS. BUTLER. 0 50
- LOURDES. CLARKE, S.J. 0 50
- MANUAL OF SELF-KNOWLEDGE AND CHRISTIAN
PERFECTION, A. HENRY, C.SS.R. 0 50
- MANUAL OF THEOLOGY FOR THE LAITY. GEIERMANN.
C.SS.R. Paper, 0.30; Cloth, 0 60
- MANUAL OF THE HOLY EUCHARIST. LASANCE. 0 85
- MANUAL OF THE HOLY NAME. 0 50
- MANUAL OF THE SACRED HEART. 0 35
- MARY HELP OF CHRISTIANS. HAMMER, O.F.M. 2 00
- MARY THE QUEEN. RELIGIOUS H. C. J. 0 35
- MASS AND VESTMENTS OF THE CATHOLIC CHURCH.
WALSH. *net*, 1 75
- MASS DEVOTIONS AND READINGS ON THE MASS.
LASANCE. 0 85
- MASS-SERVER'S CARD. Per doz. 0 35
- MEANS OF GRACE. BRENNAN. 3 00
- MEDITATIONS FOR ALL THE DAYS OF THE YEAR.
HAMON, S.S. 5 vols. *net*, 5 00
- MEDITATIONS FOR EVERY DAY IN THE YEAR. BAXTER.
net, 1 50
- MEDITATIONS FOR EVERY DAY IN THE YEAR.
VERCRUYSE, S.J. 2 vols. *net*, 3 50
- MEDITATIONS FOR EVERY DAY IN THE MONTH.
NEPVEU-RYAN. 0 50

- MEDITATIONS ON THE LAST WORDS FROM THE
CROSS. PERRAUD. *net*, 0 50
- MEDITATIONS ON THE LIFE, THE TEACHING, AND THE
PASSION OF JESUS CHRIST. ILG-CLARKE. 2
vols. *net*, 3 50
- MEDITATIONS ON THE MYSTERIES OF OUR HOLY
FAITH. BARRAUD, S.J. 2 vols. *net*, 3 00
- MEDITATIONS ON THE PASSION OF OUR LORD. 0 50
- MEDITATIONS ON THE SUFFERINGS OF JESUS CHRIST.
PERINALDO. 0 50
- MIDDLE AGES. SHAHAN. *net*, 2 00
- MISCELLANEOUS WRITINGS OF ST. ALPHONSUS
LIGUORI. *net*, 1 50
- MISSAL EXPLAINED, THE. FLEURY, S.J. *net*, 1 85
- MISSION BOOK FOR THE MARRIED. GIRARDEY. C.SS.R. 0
50
- MISSION BOOK FOR THE SINGLE. GIRARDEY, C.SS.R. 0 50
- MOMENTS BEFORE THE TABERNACLE. RUSSELL, S.J. *net*,
0 50
- MORAL PRINCIPLES AND MEDICAL PRACTICE.
COPPENS, S.J. 12mo. *net*, 1 00
- MORALITY OF MODERN SOCIALISM. MING, S.J. *net*, 1 50
- MORE SHORT SPIRITUAL READINGS FOR MARY'S
CHILDREN. MADAME CECILIA. 0 50
- MY PRAYER-BOOK. LASANCE. Imitation leather, 1.25; India
paper, 2.00. With Epistles and Gospels, India
paper, 2 25
- NAMES THAT LIVE IN CATHOLIC HEARTS. SADLIER. 0 50
- NARROW WAY. GEIERMANN, C.SS.R. 0 60
- NEW MANUAL OF ST. ANTHONY. 0 50
- NEW MISSAL FOR EVERY DAY. LASANCE. Imitation leather,
1 50 Gold edges, 1.75, and in finer bindings.

- NEW TESTAMENT. Cloth, 0.50; American Seal, *net*, 1.50.
 Plain Edition, *net*, 0.20; and in finer bindings up
 to *net*, 0.60. Plain Edition, Illustrated, *net*, 0.60.
 Illustrated Edition. India paper, Am. Seal, *net*,
 0.75, and in finer bindings up to *net*, 1 60
- OFFICE OF HOLY WEEK. *net*, 0 20
- OUR FAVORITE DEVOTIONS. LINGS. 0 75
- OUR FAVORITE NOVENAS. LINGS. 0 75
- OUTLINES OF DOGMATIC THEOLOGY. HUNTER. 3 vols.
net, 4 50
- OUTLINES OF JEWISH HISTORY, from Abraham to Our
 Lord. GIGOT. 8 vo. *net*, 1 75
- OUTLINES OF NEW TESTAMENT HISTORY. GIGOT. *net*, 1
 75
- PARADISE ON EARTH OPENED TO ALL. NATALE, S.J. *net*,
 0 50
- PASSION AND THE DEATH OF JESUS CHRIST. ST.
 ALPHONSUS LIGUORI. *net*, 1 50
- PASTORAL LETTERS. McFAUL. *net*, 1 50
- PATRON SAINTS FOR CATHOLIC YOUTH. Mannix. Each
 vol. 0 60
- PEARLS FROM FABER. BRUNOWE. 0 35
- PICTORIAL LIVES OF THE SAINTS. 3 00
- POLICEMEN'S AND FIREMEN'S COMPANION. McGRATH.
 Cloth, 0.25; American Seal, 0 50
- POLITICAL AND MORAL ESSAYS. RICKABY, S.J. *net*, 1 75
- POPULAR LIFE OF ST. TERESA. PORTER. 0 50
- PRAYER-BOOK FOR RELIGIOUS. LASANCE. Cloth, *net*,
 1.50; American Seal, *net*, 2 50
- PREACHING. ST. ALPHONSUS LIGUORI. *net*, 1 50
- PREPARATION FOR DEATH. ST. ALPHONSUS LIGUORI. *net*, 1
 50

- PRINCIPLES, ORIGIN, AND ESTABLISHMENT OF THE
CATHOLIC SCHOOL SYSTEM. BURNS. *net*, 1
75
- PRIVATE RETREAT FOR RELIGIOUS. GEIERMANN, C.SS.R.
net, 1 50
- QUEEN'S FESTIVALS, THE. RELIGIOUS H. C. J. 0 35
- RAMBLES IN CATHOLIC LANDS. BARRETT, O.S.B. *net*, 2 00 [271]
- REASONABLENESS OF CATHOLIC CEREMONIES AND
PRACTICES. BURKE. Paper, 0.15; Cloth, 0 35
- RELIGIOUS STATE. ST. ALPHONSUS LIGUORI. *net*, 0 50
- ROMA. Pagan, Subterranean, and Modern Rome in Word and
Picture. KUHN. Cloth, *net*, 10.00; Full red
morocco, *net*, 16 00
- ROMAN CURIA AS IT NOW EXISTS. MARTIN, S.J. *net*, 1 50
- ROMAN MISSAL. Embossed cloth, and in finer bindings, *net*,
1 85
- ROSARY, THE CROWN OF MARY. DOMINICAN FATHER.
Paper, 0 10
- RULES OF LIFE FOR THE PASTOR OF SOULS.
SLATER-RAUCH. *net*, 1 00
- SACRAMENTALS OF THE CHURCH. LAMBING. Paper, 0.25;
Cloth, 0 50
- SACRED HEART BOOK. LASANCE. Im. leather, 0.85; Am.
Seal, 1 25
- SACRED HEART STUDIED IN THE SACRED
SCRIPTURES. SAINTRAIN, C.SS.R. 0 50
- SACRIFICE OF THE MASS WORTHILY CELEBRATED.
CHAIGNON-GOESBRIAND. *net*, 1 75
- ST. ANTHONY. KELLER. *net*, 0 75
- ST. ANTHONY. WARD. 0 50
- SAINT FRANCIS OF ASSISI. DUBOIS, S.M. 0 50
- SAINTS AND PLACES. AYSCOUGH. *net*, 1 50
- SANCTUARY BOYS' ILLUSTRATED MANUAL.
McCALLEN. *net*, 0 50

SCAPULAR MEDAL. GEIERMANN, C.S.S.R. Paper, 0 05

SECRET OF SANCTITY. McMAHON. 0 50

SERAPHIC GUIDE. 0 60

SHORT CONFERENCES ON THE SACRED HEART.

BRINKMEYER. 0 50

SHORT COURSE IN CATHOLIC DOCTRINE. Paper, 0 10

SHORT HISTORY OF MORAL THEOLOGY. SLATER. *net*, 0
50

SHORT LIVES OF THE SAINTS. DONNELLY. 0 60

SHORT MEDITATIONS FOR EVERY DAY. LASAUSSE. 0 50

SHORT STORIES ON CHRISTIAN DOCTRINE. McMAHON.
net, 1 00

SHORT VISITS TO THE BLESSED SACRAMENT. LASANCE.
Cloth, 0 15

SOCIALISM AND CHRISTIANITY. STANG. *net*, 1 00

SOCIALISM: ITS THEORETICAL BASIS AND
PRACTICAL APPLICATION.

CATHREIN-GETTELMANN. *net*, 1 50

SODALIST'S VADE MECUM. 0 40

SOLDIERS' AND SAILORS' COMPANION. McGRATH.
Cloth, 0.25; American Seal, 0 50

SPECIAL INTRODUCTION TO THE STUDY OF THE OLD
TESTAMENT. GIGOT. Part I, *net*, 1.75; Part II,
net, 2 25

SPIRAGO'S METHOD OF CHRISTIAN DOCTRINE.

MESSMER. *net*, 1 50

SPIRIT OF SACRIFICE, THE, AND THE LIFE OF
SACRIFICE IN THE RELIGIOUS STATE.

GIRAUD-THURSTON. *net*, 2 00

SPIRITUAL CONSIDERATIONS. BUCKLER, O.P. 0 50

SPIRITUAL DESPONDENCY AND TEMPTATIONS.

MICHEL-GARESCHÉ. *net*, 1 25

SPIRITUAL EXERCISES FOR A TEN DAYS' RETREAT.

SMETANA, C.S.S.R. *net*, 0 75

- SPIRITUAL PEPPER AND SALT. STANG. Paper, 0.30; Cloth, 0 60
- SPOILING THE DIVINE FEAST. ZULUETA, S.J. Paper, 0 07
- STORIES FOR FIRST COMMUNICANTS. KELLER. *net*, 0 50
- STORY OF JESUS SIMPLY TOLD FOR THE YOUNG. MULHOLLAND. 0 60
- STORY OF THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES. LYNCH, S.J. *net*, 1 75
- STORY OF THE DIVINE CHILD. LINGS. 0 35
- STORY OF THE FRIENDS OF JESUS. RELIGIOUS H. C. J. 0 35
- STORIES OF THE MIRACLES OF OUR LORD. 0 35
- SUNDAY MISSAL, THE. LASANCE. Imitation leather, 0.75; American seal. 1 25
- SUNDAY-SCHOOL DIRECTOR'S GUIDE. SLOAN. *net*, 0 75
- SUNDAY-SCHOOL TEACHER'S GUIDE. SLOAN. 0 50
- SURE WAY TO A HAPPY MARRIAGE. TAYLOR. 0 50
- TALKS WITH THE LITTLE ONES ABOUT THE APOSTLES' CREED. RELIGIOUS H. C. J. 0 35 [272]
- THOUGHTS AND AFFECTIONS ON THE PASSION OF JESUS CHRIST FOR EVERY DAY OF THE YEAR. BERGAMO, O.M.Cap. *net*, 2 00
- THOUGHTS AND COUNSELS FOR THE CONSIDERATION OF CATHOLIC YOUNG MEN. DOSS-WIRTH. *net*, 1 25
- THOUGHTS ON THE RELIGIOUS LIFE. LASANCE. *net*, 1 50
- TRAINING OF CHILDREN AND OF GIRLS IN THEIR TEENS. MADAME CECILIA. Paper, 0.25; Cloth, 0 60
- TRUE POLITENESS. DEMORE. *net*, 0 75
- TRUE SPOUSE OF CHRIST. ST. ALPHONSUS LIGUORI. 1 vol. edition, 0.50; 2 vol. edition, *net*, 3 00
- TWO SPIRITUAL RETREATS FOR SISTERS. ZOLLNER-WIRTH. *net*, 1 00

VENERATION OF THE BLESSED VIRGIN.

ROHNER-BRENNAN. 0 50

VICTORIES OF THE MARTYRS. ST. ALPHONSUS LIGUORI.
net, 1 50

VIGIL HOUR. RYAN, S.J. Paper, 0 10

VISITS TO JESUS IN THE TABERNACLE. LASANCE. 1 25

VISITS TO THE MOST HOLY SACRAMENT. ST.

ALPHONSUS LIGUORI. 0 35

VOCATION. VAN TRICHT-CONNIFF. Paper, 0 07

VOCATIONS EXPLAINED. Cloth, 0 10

WAY OF INTERIOR PEACE. DE LEHEN, S.J. *net*, 1 50

WAY OF SALVATION AND OF PERFECTION. ST.

ALPHONSUS LIGUORI. *net*, 1 50

WAY OF THE CROSS. Illustrated. Paper, 0 05

WAY OF THE CROSS, THE. Large-type edition. Method of
ST. ALPHONSUS LIGUORI. Illustrated. 0 15

WAY OF THE CROSS. Illustrated. Eucharistic method. 0 15

WAY OF THE CROSS. By a Jesuit Father. Illustrated. 0 15

WAY OF THE CROSS. ST. FRANCIS OF ASSISI. Illustrated. 0 15

WAY OF THE CROSS. Illustrated. ST. ALPHONSUS LIGUORI. 0
15

WHAT CATHOLICS HAVE DONE FOR SCIENCE.

BRENNAN. *net*, 1 25WHAT THE CHURCH TEACHES. DRURY. Paper, 0.30; Cloth,
0 60WHAT TIMES! WHAT MORALS! SEMPLE, S.J. Paper, 0.20;
Cloth, 0 50WITH CHRIST, MY FRIEND. SLOAN. *net*, 0 75WITH GOD. LASANCE. Imitation leather, 1.25; American Seal,
2 00

WOMEN OF CATHOLICITY. SADLIER. 0 50

YOUNG MAN'S GUIDE. LASANCE. Imitation leather. 0 75

NOVELS.

- AGATHA'S HARD SAYING. MULHOLLAND. 1 00
 BACK TO THE WORLD. CHAMPOL. *net*, 1 35
 BALLADS OF CHILDHOOD. (Poems.) EARLS, S.J. *net*, 1 00
 BLACK BROTHERHOOD, THE. GARROLD, S.J. *net*, 1 35
 BOND AND FREE. CONNOR. 0 50
 "BUT THY LOVE AND THY GRACE." FINN, S.J. 1 00
 BY THE BLUE RIVER. CLARKE. *net*, 1 35
 CARROLL DARE. WAGGAMAN. 1 25
 CATTLE TRAIL OF THE PRAIRIES. 0 50
 CIRCUS-RIDER'S DAUGHTER. BRACKEL. 0 50
 CLIMBING THE ALPS. 0 50
 CONNOR D'ARCY'S STRUGGLES. BERTHOLDS. 0 50
 CORINNE'S VOW. WAGGAMAN. 1 25
 DAUGHTER OF KINGS. A. HINKSON. 1 25
 DION AND THE SIBYLS. KEON. 0 50
 DOUBLE KNOT, A. AND OTHER STORIES. 0 50
 ELDER MISS AINSBOROUGH. TAGGART. 1 25
 ESQUIMAUX, THE. 0 50
 FABIOLA. WISEMAN. 0 50
 FABIOLA'S SISTERS. CLARKE. 0 50
 FATAL BEACON, THE. BRACKEL. 1 25
 FAUSTULA. AYSCOUGH. *net*, 1 35
 FINE CLAY. CLARKE. *net*, 1 35
 FLOWERS OF THE CLOISTER. (Poems.) LA MOTTE. 1 25
 FORGIVE AND FORGET. LINGEN. 0 50
 FRIENDLY LITTLE HOUSE, THE, AND OTHER STORIES.
 0 50
 FURS AND FUR HUNTERS. 0 50
 GRAPES OF THORNS. WAGGAMAN. *net*, 1 25
 HANDLING MAIL FOR MILLIONS. 0 50
 HEART OF A MAN, THE. MAHER. *net*, 1 35
 HEARTS OF GOLD. EDHOR. 1 25
 HEIRESS OF CRONENSTEIN. HAHN-HAHN. 0 50
 HER BLIND FOLLY. HOLT. 1 25

- HER FATHER'S DAUGHTER. HINKSON. 1 25
 HER FATHER'S SHARE. POWER. *net*, 1 25
 HER JOURNEY'S END. COOKE. 0 50
 IDOLS: OR THE SECRET OF THE RUE CHAUSSEE
 D'ANTIN. NAVERY. 0 50
 IN GOD'S GOOD TIME. ROSS. 0 50
 IN THE DAYS OF KING HAL. TAGGART. 1 25
 IVY HEDGE, THE. EGAN. *net*, 1 35
 KIND HEARTS AND CORONETS. HARRISON. 1 25
 LADY OF THE TOWER, THE, AND OTHER STORIES. 0 50
 LIFE UNDERGROUND. 0 50
 LIGHT OF HIS COUNTENANCE. HARTE. 0 50
 "LIKE UNTO A MERCHANT." GRAY. *net*, 1 35
 LINKED LIVES. DOUGLAS. *net*, 1 35
 LITTLE CARDINAL, THE. PARR. 1 25
 MARCELLA GRACE. MULHOLLAND. 0 50
 MARIAE COROLLA. (Poems.) HILL. C.P. 1 25
 MARIE OF THE HOUSE D'ANTERS. EARLS. S.J. *net*, 1 35
 MELCHIOR OF BOSTON. EARLS. S.J. 1 00
 MIGHTY FRIEND, THE. L'ERMITE. *net*, 1 35
 MIRROR OF SHALOTT. BENSON. *net*, 1 35
 MISS ERIN, FRANCIS. 0 50
 MONK'S PARDON, THE. NAVERY. 0 50
 MR. BILLY BUTTONS. LECKY. 1 25
 MY LADY BEATRICE. COOKE. 0 50
 NOT A JUDGMENT. KEON. 1 25
 ON PATROL WITH A BOUNDARY RIDER. 0 50
 ONLY ANNE. CLARKE. *net*, 1 35
 OTHER MISS LISLE, THE. MARTIN. 0 50
 OUT OF BONDAGE. HOLT. 1 25
 OUTLAW OF CAMARGUE. LAMOTHE. 0 50
 PASSING SHADOWS. YORKE. 1 25
 PAT. HINKSON. *net*, 1 35
 PERE MONNIER'S WARD. LECKY. 1 25

- PILKINGTON HEIR, THE. SADLIER. 1 25
PRISONERS' YEARS. CLARKE. *net*, 1 35
PRODIGAL'S DAUGHTER, THE. BUGG. 1 00
PROPHET'S WIFE, THE. BROWNE. 1 25
RED INN OF ST. LYPHAR. SADLIER. 1 25
REST HOUSE, THE. CLARKE. *net*, 1 35
ROAD BEYOND THE TOWN, AND OTHER POEMS. EARLS.
1 25
ROSE OF THE WORLD. MARTIN. 0 50
ROUND TABLE OF AMERICAN CATHOLIC NOVELISTS.
0 50
ROUND TABLE OF FRENCH CATHOLIC NOVELISTS. 0
50
ROUND TABLE OF GERMAN CATHOLIC NOVELISTS. 0
50
ROUND TABLE OF IRISH AND ENGLISH CATHOLIC
NOVELISTS. 0 50
RULER OF THE KINGDOM, THE. KEON. 1 25
SECRET CITADEL, THE. CLARKE. *net*, 1 35
SECRET OF THE GREEN VASE, COOKE. 0 50
SENIOR LIEUTENANT'S WAGER, THE, AND OTHER
STORIES. 0 50
SHADOW OF EVERSLEIGH, THE. LANSDOWNE. 0 50
SHIELD OF SILENCE, THE. HENRY-RUFFIN. *net*, 1 35
SO AS BY FIRE. CONNOR. 0 50
SOGGARTH AROON, THE. GUINAN. 1 25
SON OF SIRO, COPUS. S.J. *net*, 1 35
STORY OF CECILIA. HINKSON. *net*, 1 35
STREET SCENES IN DIFFERENT LANDS. 0 50
STUORE. (Stories.) EARLS. S.J. 1 00
TEMPEST OF THE HEART, THE. GRAY. 0 50
TEST OF COURAGE, THE. ROSS. 0 50
THAT MAN'S DAUGHTER. ROSS. 1 25
THEIR CHOICE. SKINNER. 0 50

THROUGH THE DESERT. SIENKIEWICZ. *net*, 1 35

TRAIL OF THE DRAGON, THE, AND OTHER STORIES. 0
50

[274]

TRAINING OF SILAS. DEVINE. 1

TRUE STORY OF MASTER GERARD. SADLIER. 1 25

TURN OF THE TIDE. GRAY. 0 50

UNBIDDEN GUEST, THE. COOKE. 0 50

UNDER THE CEDARS AND THE STARS. SHEEHAN. *net*, 1 50

UNRAVELLING OF A TANGLE. TAGGART. 1 25

UP IN ARDMUIRLAND. BARRETT. O.S.B. *net*, 1 25

VOCATION OF EDWARD CONWAY. EGAN. 1 25

WARGRAVE TRUST, THE. REID. 1 25

WAY THAT LED BEYOND, THE. HARRISON. 1 25

WEDDING BELLS OF GLENDALOUGH. EARLS. S.J. *net*, 1
35

WEST AND THE GREAT PETRIFIED FOREST, THE. 0 50

WHEN LOVE IS STRONG. KEON. 1 25

WINNING OF THE NEW WEST, THE. 0 50

WOMAN OF FORTUNE. REID. 1 25

JUVENILES

ADVENTURE WITH THE APACHES. FERRY. 0 35

ALTHEA. NIRDLINGER. 0 50

AS GOLD IN THE FURNACE. COPUS. 1 00

AS TRUE AS GOLD. MANNIX. 0 35

BELL FOUNDRY. SCHACHING. 0 35

BERKLEYS, THE. WIGHT. 0 35

BEST FOOT FORWARD, THE. FINN. 1 00

BETWEEN FRIENDS. AUMERLE. 0 50

BISTOURI. MELANDRI. 0 35

BLISSLYVANIA POST-OFFICE, THE. TAGGART. 0 35

BOB O'LINK. WAGGAMAN. 0 35

BROWNIE AND I. AUMERLE. 0 50

BUNT AND BILL. MULHOLLAND. 0 35

BY BRANSCOME RIVER. TAGGART. 0 35
CAMP BY COPPER RIVER. SPALDING. 1 00
CAPTAIN TED. WAGGAMAN. 0 50
CAVE BY THE BEACH FORK. SPALDING. 1 00
CHARLIE CHITTYWICK. BEARNE. 1 00
CHILDREN OF CUPA. MANNIX. 0 35
CHILDREN OF THE LOG CABIN. DELAMARE. 0 50
CLARE LORAINÉ. "LEE." 0 50
CLAUDE LIGHTFOOT. FINN. 1 00
COLLEGE BOY, A. YORKE. 1 00
CUPA REVISITED. MANNIX. 0 35
CUPID OF CAMPION. FINN. 1 00
DADDY DAN. WAGGAMAN. 0 35
DEAR FRIENDS. NIRDLINGER. 0 50
DIMPLING'S SUCCESS. MULHOLLAND. 0 35
ETHELRED PRESTON. FINN. 1 00
EVERY-DAY GIRL, AN. CROWLEY. 0 35
FAIRY OF THE SNOWS, THE. FINN. 1 00
FIVE BIRDS IN A NEST. DELAMARE. 0 50
FIVE O'CLOCK STORIES. 0 75
FLOWER OF THE FLOCK, THE. EGAN. 1 00
FOR THE WHITE ROSE. HINKSON. 0 35
FRED'S LITTLE DAUGHTER. SMITH. 0 35
FREDDY CARR'S ADVENTURES. GARROLD. 0 50
FREDDY CARR AND HIS FRIENDS. GARROLD. 0 50
GOLDEN LILY, THE. HINKSON. 0 35
GREAT CAPTAIN, THE. HINKSON. 0 35
GUILD BOYS' PLAY AT RIDINGDALE. BEARNE. 1 00
HALDEMAN CHILDREN, THE. MANNIX. 0 35
HARMONY FLATS. WHITMIRE. 0 50
HARRY DEE. FINN. 1 00
HARRY RUSSELL. COPUS. 1 00
HEIR OF DREAMS, AN. O'MALLEY. 0 35
HIS FIRST AND LAST APPEARANCE. FINN. 1 00

[275]

HOSTAGE OF WAR, A. BONESTEEL. 0 35
 HOW THEY WORKED THEIR WAY. EGAN. 0 50
 IN QUEST OF ADVENTURE. MANNIX. 0 35
 IN QUEST OF THE GOLDEN CHEST. BARTON. 0 50
 JACK. RELIGIOUS. H. C. J. 0 35
 JACK HILDRETH ON THE NILE. TAGGART. 0 50
 JACK-O'-LANTERN. WAGGAMAN. 0 35
 JUNIORS OF ST. BEDE'S. BRYSON. 0 50
 JUVENILE ROUND TABLE First Series, Second Series, Third
 Series. Each 1 00
 KLONDIKE PICNIC, A. DONNELLY. 0 50
 LEGENDS AND STORIES OF THE HOLY CHILD JESUS.
 LUTZ. 0 75
 LITTLE APOSTLE ON CRUTCHES. DELAMARE. 0 35
 LITTLE GIRL FROM BACK EAST. ROBERTS. 0 35
 LITTLE LADY OF THE HALL. RYEMAN. 0 35
 LITTLE MARSHALLS AT THE LAKE. NIXON-ROULET. 0 50
 LITTLE MISSY. WAGGAMAN. 0 35
 LOYAL BLUE AND ROYAL SCARLET. TAGGART. 1 00
 MAD KNIGHT, THE. SCHACHING. 0 35
 MADCAP SET AT ST. ANNE'S. BRUNOWE. 0 35
 MAKING OF MORTLAKE. COPUS. 1 00
 MARKS OF THE BEAR CLAWS. SPALDING. 1 00
 MARY TRACY'S FORTUNE. SADLIER. 0 35
 MELOR OF THE SILVER HAND. BEARNE. 1 00
 MILLY AVELING. SMITH. 0 50
 MIRALDA. JOHNSTON. 0 35
 MORE FIVE O'CLOCK STORIES. 0 75
 MOSTLY BOYS. FINN. 1 00
 MYSTERIOUS DOORWAY. SADLIER. 0 35
 MYSTERY OF CLEVERLY. BARTON. 0 50
 MYSTERY OF HORNBY HALL. SADLIER. 0 50
 NAN NOBODY. WAGGAMAN. 0 35
 NED RIEDER. WEHS. 0 50

NEW BOYS AT RIDINGDALE. BEARNE. 1 00
NEW SCHOLAR AT ST. ANNE'S. BRUNOWE. 0 50
OLD CHARLMONT'S SEED-BED. SMITH. 0 35
OLD MILL ON THE WITHROSE. SPALDING. 1 00
ON THE OLD CAMPING GROUND. MANNIX. 1 00
OUR LADY'S LUTENIST. BEARNE. 1 00
PANCHO AND PANCHITA. MANNIX. 0 35
PAULINE ARCHER. SADLIER. 0 35
PERCY WYNN. FINN. 1 00
PERIL OF DIONYSIO, THE. MANNIX. 0 35
PETRONILLA, AND OTHER STORIES. DONNELLY. 0 50
PICKLE AND PEPPER. DORSEY. 1 00
PILGRIM FROM IRELAND. CARNOT. 0 35
PLAYWATER PLOT, THE. WAGGAMAN. 0 50
POLLY DAY'S ISLAND. ROBERTS. 1 00
POVERINA. BUCKENHAM. 0 50
QUEEN'S PAGE, THE. HINKSON. 0 35
QUEEN'S PROMISE, THE. WAGGAMAN. 0 50
QUEST OF MARY SELWYN. CLEMENTIA. 1 00
RACE FOR COPPER ISLAND. SPALDING. 1 00
RECRUIT TOMMY COLLINS. BONESTEEL. 0 35
RIDINGDALE FLOWER SHOW. BEARNE. 1 00
ROMANCE OF THE SILVER SHOON. BEARNE. 1 00
ST. CUTHBERT'S. COPUS. 1 00
SANDY JOE. WAGGAMAN. 1 00
SEA-GULL'S ROCK. SANDEAU. 0 35
SEVEN LITTLE MARSHALLS. NIXON-ROULET. 0 35
SHADOWS LIFTED. COPUS. 1 00
SHEER PLUCK. BEARNE. 1 00
SHERIFF OF THE BEECH FORK. SPALDING. 1 00
SHIPMATES. WAGGAMAN. 0 50
STRONG-ARM OF AVALON. WAGGAMAN. 1 00
SUGAR CAMP AND AFTER. SPALDING. 1 00
SUMMER AT WOODVILLE, A. SADLIER. 0 35

TALES AND LEGENDS OF THE MIDDLE AGES. CAPELLA.

0 75

TALISMAN, THE. SADLIER. 0 50

TAMING OF POLLY, THE. DORSEY. 1 00

THAT FOOTBALL GAME. FINN. 1 00

THAT OFFICE BOY. FINN. 1 00

THREE LITTLE GIRLS, AND ESPECIALLY ONE. TAGGART.

0 35

TOLD IN THE TWILIGHT. SALOME. 0 50

TOM LOSELY: BOY. COPUS. 1 00

TOM PLAYFAIR. FINN. 1 00

TOM'S LUCK-POT. WAGGAMAN. 0 35

[276]

TOORALLADDY. By JULIA C. WALSH. 0 35

TRANSPLANTING OF TESSIE. WAGGAMAN. 0 50

TREASURE OF NUGGET MOUNTAIN. TAGGART. 0 50

TWO LITTLE GIRLS. MACK. 0 35

UNCLE FRANK'S MARY. CLEMENTIA. 1 00

UPS AND DOWNS OF MARJORIE. WAGGAMAN. 0 35

VIOLIN MAKER, THE. Adapted by SARA TRAINER SMITH. 0 35

WAYWARD WINIFRED. SADLIER. 1 00

WINNETOU, THE APACHE KNIGHT. TAGGART. 0 50

WITCH OF RIDINGDALE. BEARNE. 1 00

YOUNG COLOR GUARD. BONESTEEL. 0 35

Footnotes

***END OF THE PROJECT GUTENBERG EBOOK THE
CLERGYMAN'S HAND-BOOK OF LAW***

Credits

March 12, 2011

Project Gutenberg TEI edition 1

Produced by David King and the Online Distributed Proofreading Team at <<http://www.pgdp.net/>>. (This file was produced from images generously made available by The Internet Archive/Canadian Libraries.)

A Word from Project Gutenberg

This file should be named 35563-pdf.pdf or 35563-pdf.zip.

This and all associated files of various formats will be found in:

<http://book.klll.cc/dirs/3/5/5/6/35563/>

Updated editions will replace the previous one — the old editions will be renamed.

Creating the works from public domain print editions means that no one owns a United States copyright in these works, so the Foundation (and you!) can copy and distribute it in the United States without permission and without paying copyright royalties. Special rules, set forth in the General Terms of Use part of this license, apply to copying and distributing Project Gutenberg™ electronic works to protect the Project Gutenberg™ concept and trademark. Project Gutenberg is a registered trademark, and may not be used if you charge for the eBooks, unless you receive specific permission. If you do not charge anything for copies of this eBook, complying with the rules is very easy. You may use this eBook for nearly any purpose such as creation of derivative works, reports, performances and research. They may be modified and printed and given away — you may do practically *anything* with public domain eBooks. Redistribution is subject to the trademark license, especially commercial redistribution.

The Full Project Gutenberg License

Please read this before you distribute or use this work.

To protect the Project Gutenberg™ mission of promoting the free distribution of electronic works, by using or distributing this work (or any other work associated in any way with the phrase “Project Gutenberg”), you agree to comply with all the terms of the Full Project Gutenberg™ License (available with this file or online at <http://book.klll.cc/license>).

Section 1.

General Terms of Use & Redistributing Project Gutenberg™ electronic works

1.A.

By reading or using any part of this Project Gutenberg™ electronic work, you indicate that you have read, understand, agree to and accept all the terms of this license and intellectual property (trademark/copyright) agreement. If you do not agree to abide by all the terms of this agreement, you must cease using and return or destroy all copies of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works in your possession. If you paid a fee for obtaining a copy of or access to a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work and you do not agree to be bound by the terms of this agreement, you may obtain a refund from the person or entity to whom you paid the fee as set forth in paragraph 1.E.8.

1.B.

“Project Gutenberg” is a registered trademark. It may only be used on or associated in any way with an electronic work by people who agree to be bound by the terms of this agreement. There are a few things that you can do with most Project Gutenberg™ electronic works even without complying with the full terms of this agreement. See paragraph 1.C below. There are a lot of things you can do with Project Gutenberg™ electronic works if you follow the terms of this agreement and help preserve free future access to Project Gutenberg™ electronic works. See paragraph 1.E below.

1.C.

The Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation (“the Foundation” or PGLAF), owns a compilation copyright in the collection of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works. Nearly all the individual works in the collection are in the public domain in the United States. If an individual work is in the public domain in the United States and you are located in the United States, we do not claim a right to prevent you from copying, distributing, performing, displaying or creating derivative works based on the work as long as all references to Project Gutenberg are removed. Of course, we hope that you will support the Project Gutenberg™ mission of promoting free access to electronic works by freely sharing Project Gutenberg™ works in compliance with the terms of this agreement for keeping the Project Gutenberg™ name associated with the work. You can easily comply with the terms of this agreement by keeping this work in the same format with its attached full Project Gutenberg™ License when you share it without charge with others.

1.D.

The copyright laws of the place where you are located also govern what you can do with this work. Copyright laws in most countries are in a constant state of change. If you are outside the United States, check the laws of your country in addition to the terms of this agreement before downloading, copying, displaying, performing, distributing or creating derivative works based on this work or any other Project Gutenberg™ work. The Foundation makes no representations concerning the copyright status of any work in any country outside the United States.

1.E.

Unless you have removed all references to Project Gutenberg:

1.E.1.

The following sentence, with active links to, or other immediate access to, the full Project Gutenberg™ License must appear prominently whenever any copy of a Project Gutenberg™ work (any work on which the phrase “Project Gutenberg” appears, or with which the phrase “Project Gutenberg” is associated) is accessed, displayed, performed, viewed, copied or distributed:

This eBook is for the use of anyone anywhere at no cost and with almost no restrictions whatsoever. You may copy it, give it away or re-use it under the terms of the Project Gutenberg License included with this eBook or online at <http://book.klll.cc>

1.E.2.

If an individual Project Gutenberg™ electronic work is derived from the public domain (does not contain a notice indicating that it is posted with permission of the copyright holder), the work can be copied and distributed to anyone in the United States without paying any fees or charges. If you are redistributing or providing access to a work with the phrase “Project Gutenberg” associated with or appearing on the work, you must comply either with the requirements of paragraphs 1.E.1 through 1.E.7 or obtain permission for the use of the work and the Project Gutenberg™ trademark as set forth in paragraphs 1.E.8 or 1.E.9.

1.E.3.

If an individual Project Gutenberg™ electronic work is posted with the permission of the copyright holder, your use and distribution must comply with both paragraphs 1.E.1 through 1.E.7 and any additional terms imposed by the copyright holder. Additional terms will be linked to the Project Gutenberg™ License for all works posted with the permission of the copyright holder found at the beginning of this work.

1.E.4.

Do not unlink or detach or remove the full Project Gutenberg™ License terms from this work, or any files containing a part of this work or any other work associated with Project Gutenberg™.

1.E.5.

Do not copy, display, perform, distribute or redistribute this electronic work, or any part of this electronic work, without prominently displaying the sentence set forth in paragraph 1.E.1

with active links or immediate access to the full terms of the Project Gutenberg™ License.

1.E.6.

You may convert to and distribute this work in any binary, compressed, marked up, nonproprietary or proprietary form, including any word processing or hypertext form. However, if you provide access to or distribute copies of a Project Gutenberg™ work in a format other than “Plain Vanilla ASCII” or other format used in the official version posted on the official Project Gutenberg™ web site (<http://book.klll.cc>), you must, at no additional cost, fee or expense to the user, provide a copy, a means of exporting a copy, or a means of obtaining a copy upon request, of the work in its original “Plain Vanilla ASCII” or other form. Any alternate format must include the full Project Gutenberg™ License as specified in paragraph 1.E.1.

1.E.7.

Do not charge a fee for access to, viewing, displaying, performing, copying or distributing any Project Gutenberg™ works unless you comply with paragraph 1.E.8 or 1.E.9.

1.E.8.

You may charge a reasonable fee for copies of or providing access to or distributing Project Gutenberg™ electronic works provided that

- You pay a royalty fee of 20% of the gross profits you derive from the use of Project Gutenberg™ works calculated using the method you already use to calculate your applicable taxes. The fee is owed to the owner of the Project

Gutenberg™ trademark, but he has agreed to donate royalties under this paragraph to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation. Royalty payments must be paid within 60 days following each date on which you prepare (or are legally required to prepare) your periodic tax returns. Royalty payments should be clearly marked as such and sent to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation at the address specified in Section 4, “Information about donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation.”

- You provide a full refund of any money paid by a user who notifies you in writing (or by e-mail) within 30 days of receipt that s/he does not agree to the terms of the full Project Gutenberg™ License. You must require such a user to return or destroy all copies of the works possessed in a physical medium and discontinue all use of and all access to other copies of Project Gutenberg™ works.
- You provide, in accordance with paragraph 1.F.3, a full refund of any money paid for a work or a replacement copy, if a defect in the electronic work is discovered and reported to you within 90 days of receipt of the work.
- You comply with all other terms of this agreement for free distribution of Project Gutenberg™ works.

1.E.9.

If you wish to charge a fee or distribute a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work or group of works on different terms than are set forth in this agreement, you must obtain permission in writing from both the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation and Michael Hart, the owner of the Project Gutenberg™ trademark. Contact the Foundation as set forth in Section 3 below.

1.F.

1.F.1.

Project Gutenberg volunteers and employees expend considerable effort to identify, do copyright research on, transcribe and proofread public domain works in creating the Project Gutenberg™ collection. Despite these efforts, Project Gutenberg™ electronic works, and the medium on which they may be stored, may contain “Defects,” such as, but not limited to, incomplete, inaccurate or corrupt data, transcription errors, a copyright or other intellectual property infringement, a defective or damaged disk or other medium, a computer virus, or computer codes that damage or cannot be read by your equipment.

1.F.2.

LIMITED WARRANTY, DISCLAIMER OF DAMAGES — Except for the “Right of Replacement or Refund” described in paragraph 1.F.3, the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, the owner of the Project Gutenberg™ trademark, and any other party distributing a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work under this agreement, disclaim all liability to you for damages, costs and expenses, including legal fees. **YOU AGREE THAT YOU HAVE NO REMEDIES FOR NEGLIGENCE, STRICT LIABILITY, BREACH OF WARRANTY OR BREACH OF CONTRACT EXCEPT THOSE PROVIDED IN PARAGRAPH F3. YOU AGREE THAT THE FOUNDATION, THE TRADEMARK OWNER, AND ANY DISTRIBUTOR UNDER THIS AGREEMENT WILL NOT BE LIABLE TO YOU FOR ACTUAL, DIRECT, INDIRECT, CONSEQUENTIAL, PUNITIVE OR**

INCIDENTAL DAMAGES EVEN IF YOU GIVE NOTICE
OF THE POSSIBILITY OF SUCH DAMAGE.

1.F.3.

LIMITED RIGHT OF REPLACEMENT OR REFUND — If you discover a defect in this electronic work within 90 days of receiving it, you can receive a refund of the money (if any) you paid for it by sending a written explanation to the person you received the work from. If you received the work on a physical medium, you must return the medium with your written explanation. The person or entity that provided you with the defective work may elect to provide a replacement copy in lieu of a refund. If you received the work electronically, the person or entity providing it to you may choose to give you a second opportunity to receive the work electronically in lieu of a refund. If the second copy is also defective, you may demand a refund in writing without further opportunities to fix the problem.

1.F.4.

Except for the limited right of replacement or refund set forth in paragraph 1.F.3, this work is provided to you 'AS-IS,' WITH NO OTHER WARRANTIES OF ANY KIND, EXPRESS OR IMPLIED, INCLUDING BUT NOT LIMITED TO WARRANTIES OF MERCHANTABILITY OR FITNESS FOR ANY PURPOSE.

1.F.5.

Some states do not allow disclaimers of certain implied warranties or the exclusion or limitation of certain types of damages. If any disclaimer or limitation set forth in this agreement

violates the law of the state applicable to this agreement, the agreement shall be interpreted to make the maximum disclaimer or limitation permitted by the applicable state law. The invalidity or unenforceability of any provision of this agreement shall not void the remaining provisions.

1.F.6.

INDEMNITY — You agree to indemnify and hold the Foundation, the trademark owner, any agent or employee of the Foundation, anyone providing copies of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works in accordance with this agreement, and any volunteers associated with the production, promotion and distribution of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works, harmless from all liability, costs and expenses, including legal fees, that arise directly or indirectly from any of the following which you do or cause to occur: (a) distribution of this or any Project Gutenberg™ work, (b) alteration, modification, or additions or deletions to any Project Gutenberg™ work, and (c) any Defect you cause.

Section 2.

Information about the Mission of Project Gutenberg™

Project Gutenberg™ is synonymous with the free distribution of electronic works in formats readable by the widest variety of computers including obsolete, old, middle-aged and new computers. It exists because of the efforts of hundreds of volunteers and donations from people in all walks of life.

Volunteers and financial support to provide volunteers with the assistance they need, is critical to reaching Project Gutenberg™'s goals and ensuring that the Project Gutenberg™ collection will remain freely available for generations to come. In 2001, the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation was created to provide a secure and permanent future for Project Gutenberg™ and future generations. To learn more about the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation and how your efforts and donations can help, see Sections 3 and 4 and the Foundation web page at <http://www.pgla.org>.

Section 3.

Information about the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation

The Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation is a non profit 501(c)(3) educational corporation organized under the laws of the state of Mississippi and granted tax exempt status by the Internal Revenue Service. The Foundation's EIN or federal tax identification number is 64-6221541. Its 501(c)(3) letter is posted at <http://book.klil.cc/fundraising/pglaf>. Contributions to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation are tax deductible to the full extent permitted by U.S. federal laws and your state's laws.

The Foundation's principal office is located at 4557 Melan Dr. S. Fairbanks, AK, 99712., but its volunteers and employees are scattered throughout numerous locations. Its business office is located at 809 North 1500 West, Salt Lake City, UT 84116, (801) 596-1887, email business@pglaf.org. Email contact links and up

to date contact information can be found at the Foundation's web site and official page at <http://www.pgla.org>

For additional contact information:

Dr. Gregory B. Newby
Chief Executive and Director
gbnewby@pgla.org

Section 4.

Information about Donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation

Project Gutenberg™ depends upon and cannot survive without wide spread public support and donations to carry out its mission of increasing the number of public domain and licensed works that can be freely distributed in machine readable form accessible by the widest array of equipment including outdated equipment. Many small donations (\$1 to \$5,000) are particularly important to maintaining tax exempt status with the IRS.

The Foundation is committed to complying with the laws regulating charities and charitable donations in all 50 states of the United States. Compliance requirements are not uniform and it takes a considerable effort, much paperwork and many fees to meet and keep up with these requirements. We do not solicit donations in locations where we have not received written confirmation of compliance. To SEND DONATIONS or determine the status of compliance for any particular state visit <http://book.klll.cc/fundraising/donate>

While we cannot and do not solicit contributions from states where we have not met the solicitation requirements, we know

of no prohibition against accepting unsolicited donations from donors in such states who approach us with offers to donate.

International donations are gratefully accepted, but we cannot make any statements concerning tax treatment of donations received from outside the United States. U.S. laws alone swamp our small staff.

Please check the Project Gutenberg Web pages for current donation methods and addresses. Donations are accepted in a number of other ways including checks, online payments and credit card donations. To donate, please visit: <http://book.klll.cc/fundraising/donate>

Section 5.

General Information About Project Gutenberg™ electronic works.

Professor Michael S. Hart is the originator of the Project Gutenberg™ concept of a library of electronic works that could be freely shared with anyone. For thirty years, he produced and distributed Project Gutenberg™ eBooks with only a loose network of volunteer support.

Project Gutenberg™ eBooks are often created from several printed editions, all of which are confirmed as Public Domain in the U.S. unless a copyright notice is included. Thus, we do not necessarily keep eBooks in compliance with any particular paper edition.

Each eBook is in a subdirectory of the same number as the eBook's eBook number, often in several formats including plain vanilla ASCII, compressed (zipped), HTML and others.

Corrected *editions* of our eBooks replace the old file and take over the old filename and etext number. The replaced older file is renamed. *Versions* based on separate sources are treated as new eBooks receiving new filenames and etext numbers.

Most people start at our Web site which has the main PG search facility:

<http://book.klll.cc>

This Web site includes information about Project Gutenberg™, including how to make donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, how to help produce our new eBooks, and how to subscribe to our email newsletter to hear about new eBooks.